$-$
$1 /$
ash
6. 49

161 c
$-1=0 \quad$ icu
own Moabsem



The right Hon ${ }^{\text {ble }}$ Robert Dudley Earle of Lcicester, Baron of Denbigh, knight of the noble order of St George © S. Michall, andlate one of her Ma ties ho ble privy counfell etc.

[^0]
# LEYCESTER 

 Common－wealth：
publifhed with molt ear－ neft proteftation of all du－ tifull good will and affe－ ction towards this Realme；
For whofe good onely it is macie common to many．

$$
\text { Iob } 20.27
$$

The beavens 乃oall reveale bis iniquity，and the cartb Sall rife up egainft bum．

$$
\text { Printed, } 164^{\circ}
$$




#  Ever ex  <br> THE EPISTLE DIRECTORY, 

## TO

M. G. M. In Gratious Street in Landor.
 Ere and loving friend, I receiveda about tenn dates agon your letter of the 9. of this present: wherein you demand and follcite ag sine the thing, that I fo flatly denied you, at my late being is your chamber: I means to put in writing the relation wobich then I made unto you, of the fpeech bad this taft Chriftmas in my prefonce, bet wee ne my right morrlipfull good friend and patron, and bis gueft the old Laver, of forme matters in our hate and country. And for that yous preSe mine very ferioufly at the is infant, both by request and many reafons, to yeeld to your define bereins, and not only this, but also to give my confent for the publifbing of the fame, by such secret meanies as you affine me

## The Epitle Dedicatory.

you can there find out: I bave thought good to confer the whole matter with the parties themfelves, whom principally it concerneth (who at the reccipt of your letter were not far from me: ) And albeit at the firft I found them averle and notbing inclined to grant your demand: yet after upon confideration of your reafons, and afsur ance of $f$ ecrefie (eppecially for that there is nothing in the fame contained, repugnant to charity or to our bounden duty towards our moft gratious Princes or Countrey, but rather for the Beciall goodrf them both, and for the forewarning of fome dangers imminent to the (ame) they bave referred over the matter to mee, yet mith this Provifo, that they will kirow sothing, nor yet yecld confent to the publifsing hercoof, for feare of fome future flosris of the ragged Staffe to come bereafter about their eares, if their names frould breake forth: which ( 1 truft) you woill provide, fhall nener bappen, both for their fecurity, and for your own. And with this I will end, affuring yous that witbin thefe five or fix dayes, your Ball reccive the whole in writing by whother may and fecret meanes, neithor foall the bcarer fupect what he carrieth: wherof alfo I thought good to premonijh you. And this Ball fufice for this time.

THE

## PREFACEOFTHE CONFERENCE.



Ot long before the laft Scholar. Chriftmaffe, I was requefted by a letter from a very worfhipful and grave Gentleman, whofe fonne was then my pupill in Cambridge, to repaire with my fard Scholar to a certaine houfe of his neare London, and there to paffe over the Holy-dayes in bis company : for The oce firm that it was determined that in Hillary of:ins cor:futearme following, his faid fonne fhould tence and be placed in fome Inne of Chancery, to ${ }^{\text {we. tung. }}$ follow the ftudy of the Common-law, and fo to leave the Vniverfity. This requeft was gratefull unto mee in refpeif of the time, as alfo of the matter, but efpesially of the company. For that, as I love much the yong Gintelinan, my pupill, for his towardlines in religion, learning, and vertue : fo much more I doe reverence his Father, for the riper ^ 3

## The Preface.

 poffeflion of the fame ornaments, and for his great wifedome, experience, and grave judgement in affarres of the world that do occurre : but namely touching our own Country, wherin truly I do not remember to bave heard any man in my life, difcourfe more fubftantially, inditferently, and with leffe paffion, more love and fidelity, then I have heard him. Which wasthe caufe that I tooke fingular delight to be in his company, and refufed no occafion to enjoy the fame. Which alfo he perceiving, dealt more openly and confidently with me, then with many other of his friends, as by the relation following may well appeare.The perfons and place of this conference.

When I came to the forefaid Houfe by London, I found there among other friends, an anctent man that profeffed the law, and was come from London to keepe his Chriftmas in that place, with whom at divers former times I had been well acquainted, for that he haunted much the company of the faid Gentleman my friend, and was much trutted and ufed by him in matters of his profeffion, and not a little beloved alfo for his good converfation, notwithftanding fome difference in religion between us. For albeit, this Lawyer was inclined to

## The Preface.

be a Papift, yet was it with fuch moderation and refervation of his duty towards his Prince and Countrey and proceedings of the fame : as he feemed alwares to give full fatisfaction in this point to us that were of contrary opirion.
Neither did he let to proteft oftentimes A remperate with great affection, that as he had many friends \& kinsfulk of contrary religion to himfelfe : fo did be love themnevertheleffe for their different confcience, but leaving that to God, was defirous to doe them any friendfhip or fervice that he could, with all affection, zeale, and fidelity. Neither was he wilfull or obftinate in his opinion, and much leffe reproachfull in feech (as many of thein be) but was content to heare whatioever we fhould fay to the contrary (as often we did :) and to read any booke alfo that we delivered him, for his infruction.

Which temperate behaviour, induced this Gentleman and me, to affect the more.his company, and to difcourfe as freely with him in all occurrents, as if he had been of our own religion.

$$
\mathrm{A}_{4} \quad \mathrm{THE}^{2}
$$

 Ne day then of the Chriftmaffe we three retiring our felves atecr dinner, inzo a lasge Gallery, for our recreation, (as often wee were accultomed to doe, when other went to car's i \& ohhers partumes: ) this Lawyer by chance had in his hand a lute beoke, then newly fet forth , containing Adcfance of the publique pufice done of late in Erig. The booke of 'land, uron dives Priefls and otber Papiles for tics. Iuftice. fon: Which brok, the Lawyer had read to himfelic a litile before, and was now puiting it up into his pocket; But the Gentleman my friend, who had read over the fame once or twice in my company be fore, would needs take the fame tmo his hand agauine, wnd asked the Lawyer his ju'gement upon the bocke.
The Lawyer anfwered: Thatit was evill pan- $\boldsymbol{L}_{\text {Giwow }}$. wedin ha s op nion to prove the guilcines of fome pafons the ins named in patecular, as alfo to perRiv ule in generall, thit the P piftes both abroad and at thome, who medale fo eamenly with deffuce and increafe of their roligion (for thefe areareall, (and te) doe coi (qaicnaly wifla and Iathor fome change in the fate : but yot whether fo farre forth, and in fo deepe a decree of pre per treafon, as hare in this beoke bo h in gene-

## (2)

generall and particular 1. prefumed and isforced, that (quoth he) is fome what hard (I weene) for you or me (in refpet offome other diffierence ictween us) to judge or difeene with indifferencs.

## Gentloman.

The Papifs pradices againfo the flate.

Lamgat.

Two forts of dealing againft the flate.

DireAly.

Indireaty.

Nay truly faid the Gentleman, for my pareI thinke pot fo, for that reafon is reafon in whit religion fotver. And for my felfe, I m y prouft, that l beare the hone\& Papift (if there bi iny) no malice for his deceived conlcicnce, whei of among others. your felte can be a witnes:mary h s $\operatorname{Pradi}$ ices againft the ftate, I cannot in a.ty wife digeft and much lefie may th: Commons wealth beare the fame (wherof we all depend, ) being a fine of all other, the moft hainous, and leaft pardonable. And therfore feeng in this, you grant the Papift both in generall abroad, and ar home, and in particular fuch as are condemned, execured and named in this books to be gulty: how can you infinuate (as you doe) that chere is more prefumed or enforced upon them by this booke, then there is juft caufe fo to doe ?

Gnod Sir, faid the other, I ftand not here toex. amine the doings of my fuperiours, or to defend the gulty, but wifh hartily rather their puninment that have deferved the lame. Only this I fay, for explication of my former fpeech : that men of a different relıgion from the ftate wherin rhey live, may be faid to deale againft the fame ttate in two forts: the one, by dealing for the increafe of their faid different religion, which is alwaies either directly, or indirectly aganft the ftate, (Drectly) when the faid religion containeth any point or article directly impugning the fand itate, (as perhaps you will fay that the Roman Religion doth againft the prefent fate of England in the point of Supremicy: ) and (Indirectly) for that every different religion divideth in a fort and

## (3)

draweih from the fate, in that there is no man who in his heart would not wifh to have the chief Guvernowr and fate to be of his relig on, if he could: and confeq tently minliketh the other in reipcet of that : and in this kind, not only thole whom you call bufie Papifts in England, but allo thofe whom we cill hot Puritans among you, (whofe difference from the ft tee efpecially 10 matters of governement is very well known) may be called all traytors, in mine opuion: for that every one of thefe indeed, do labour indreetly, (if not more ) aganft the ftate, in how much foever each one endeavoureth to increafe his part or faction that dificeth a Governour of his own religion.

Andin this cate allo, are the Proteftants in France and Flanders under Catholake Princes: the Calvinits (as they are called; ) under the Duke of Saxony, who is a Lutheran:the Lutherans under cafinee, that favoureth Calvinifts: the Grecians and other Chriftans under the Emperor of Conflantinople, under the Sophy, under the great Chame of Tartary, and under other Princes that agree not with them in religion. All which Subjets doe wifh (no doubt) in their hearts, that they had a Prince and Atate of their owne religion, inftead of that which now governeth them : and conftquently in this firft fenfe, they may be called all ir yors, and every af they doc for advancement of their faid different religion (diviling between the feate and them) tendeth to treafon: which their Princes fuppofing, do fometimes make divers of their acts treafonable or punifhable for treafon. Bu: yet fo long as they The fecond kind breake rot forth unto the fecond kind of treafon of treafon.
which containeth fome actuall attempt or treaty againft the life of the Prince, or ftate, by rcbellion or otherwife: Wee doe not proper'y condemne them

## (4)

them for trayzers, though they doe fome atesoif their religion made treafon by the l'rince hiy lawes, who is of a different fath.

The application of the former example.

Gentleman:

And fo to apply this to my purpoofe: I thinke, Sir, in good footh, that in the firt kind of tres. fon, as well the zealous Papif, as alfo the Par. tans in England, may well be called and proved traytors ; but in the fecond fort (whereof wes Speake properly at this time) it cannot be fo pre. cifely anfwered, for that there may be both gull ty and guilties in each religion, And as I cannot excufe all Paritans in this point, fo you canno: condemne all Papifts, as long as you take me anit forle other to be as we are.

I grant your diftinction of treafons to bo crue, ( (Taid the Gentleman,) as alfo your application thereof to the Papifts and Puritans (as you cal' them, ) not to want reafon, if there be any oi them that miffike the prefent ftate (as perhaps there be:) alceit for my part, I thiske theif two kinds of treafons, which you have pur down, be rather divers degrees thea divers kiads: wherin I will refer maee to the judgement of out Cambridge friend here prefent, whofe skill is more in logicall diftinctions. But yet my reafon is this, that indeed the one is but a flep or degree to the other, not differing in nature, but rather mn time, ability or oportuniz\%. For if (as in your former eximples you have fhe wed) the Grecizen under the Turke, and other Chriftians under o. ther Princes of a different religion, and as alto the Papifs and Puritans (as you teartut them) in England (for now this word fhall paffe be. tweene us for diftinction (ake, ) have fuch aliena. tion of mind from their prefent regiment, and do Twiw degrees of covet fo much a governour and ftate of their treafon. owne religion : then no doubt but they are alfo

## (s)

rifolved to imply their thices for accomplifhing and lringing to pafie their deffres, if they had opurtunity : and lo being now in the fiff degree or kind of ureafon, doe want bat occafion or abiluy, to breake int the fecond.

1 rue Sir, faid he Lawyer, if there be no o. Larpytro ther caufe or circumfance that may withhold thein.
Aad what caufe or circumfance may flay them Gentloman. I pray you (fand the Gentleman) when they fhall have ability and oportunity to doe a thing which they fo muth defire ?

Divers caufes (quoth the Lawyer) but efpeci- Lawger. ally and above all other (if it be at hose in their owne Country) the fear of Cervitade under forraine nations, may reftraine them from fuch attempts: as we fee in Germany that both C atholiques and Troteftants would joyne together, againf any firanger that floould offer danger to iheir libery. And forthey did againft (barles the fifth. And in France not long agoc, albeit the Prom teftants were up in armes agzinft their King, and could have been content, by he help of us in England, to have put him down, and placed another of their own religion : yet when they faw as once feazed of New haven, and to like to proceed to France: the recovery of fome part of our fates on that fi.le the Sea : they quickly juyned with their owne Catholiques againe to cepu $\|$ us.

In Flanders l kewife, though Monfietr were Flanders: called thin het by the rrotefar ts, elpecially for defence of their teligion, againtt the Spaniard : yet we fee how dainty divers chief proteftants of Antwerf, Gaunt, and Bruges were, in admiteirg him, and how quick in expelling, fo foon as he put them in the lealt feare of Cubjcetion to the French.

And as for Pur"gुतll, I hive heard fome of the Portugal. chiefert
chiefert Catholiques am..ng them fay, in this late contention about their Kingdome : that rather then they would fuffer the Caftilian to come in upon them, they would be content to admit what. foever alds of a contrary religion to themfelycs, and to adventure whatioever alteration in religion or other inconvenience might bef ill them iy that means rather then endanger therr fubje Ction to their ambitious neighbour.

The old hatred of Eaft Grecians towards the Weft Latins.

Scholiar.

Not all Papits propesly trayzors.

The like is reported in divers hiftorics of the Grecians at this day, who doc hate fo much the name and dominion of the Latines : as they had rather to endare all the muleries which eayly they fuffer under the Turke for their rel girn and otherwife : then by calling for aid from the Well to hazard the fubjeation to the faid L trincs. So that by thefe examples you fee, that feare and horrour of externall fubjection may ft.y men in ftates, and confequently alfo both Papifts and Furitans in the flace of England, from paffing to the fecond kind or degree of treafon, albrit they were never fo deepe in the firlt, and had boih ability, time, will, and oportunity for the 0 . ther.

Here I prefumed to interrupt their speech, and faid : that this feemed to mee molt cleare, and that now I underftuod what th: Lawyer meant before, when heaffirmed, that albert the moft part of Papifts in generall mig't be faid to deale againft the ftate of England at this day, in that they deal fo earnefly for the mantenance and increafe of their religion, and fo to incurre fome kind of treafon: yet (perhaps) not ©o far-forth nor in fo deepe a degree of proper treafon as in this booke is prefumed or inforced : though for my part (faid I) I dn not fee that the book prefu. meth or inforceth all ${ }^{P}$ aputs in generall to be pro.

## (7)

perly traytors, but oin wy fuch as in particular are therein named, or that are hy law attainted, condemned or execured : and what will you fay (quoth I) to thofe in particular?

Surely (quoth he) I muft fay of thefe, much Lamer. afier the manricr which I fpake before: that fome here named in this book ate openly knowne to have beene in the Second degree or kind of utafon: as Wefimercand, Nurion, sunders, and the like. Burdivers others ( $n a m e l y$ the Priefts and seminaries that of late have fuftered,) by fo nituch as I coold fee delivered and pleaded as theit arraignements, or beard protefted by thean at thear deaths, or gathered by reafon and difcourfe of my felfe, (for that no forrane Prince or wife councellor would ever commit fo great matters of ftate to fuch inflroments:) I cannot (I fay) but thiske, that to the wife of our ftate, that had the doing of this bufines, the firf degree of trealon (wherein no doubt they were) was fufficient to difpatch and make them oway: cfpectally in fuch fufpitious times as thefe are: to the end that being hanged for the firf, they fhould never bee in danger to fall inco the fecond, nor yet to draw other men to the fanse : which pethaps was moft of all mifdoubted.

After the Lawyer had fpeken this, I held my Gentleman: peace, to heire what the Gente man would anfwer: who walked up and down wo whole turnes in the Gallery wathout yee!ding any word again: and then fisying upon the fudden, caft his cyes fadly upon us both, and faid:
My mafters, he wfoever this be which indeed appertanes not to us to judge or difcur, but rather to perfivade our felves, that the ftate hath reafon to do as it doth, and that it muft oftentimes as wall

## (8)

prevent inconveniences, as reniedy the fame when they are happened: yet for my owne part I mull confeffe unto you, that upon fome confideiat oas which ufe to come unto my mind, I take no frall griefe of thice differences among us (which you terme of divers and different religions) for which we are driven of neceffity to ufe difcipline toward divers, who poffibly otherwife would be no great-
The confiderasions.

Mifery moveth mercy.

A good wifh. malefactors. I know the csufe of has diffirence is grounded upon a principle not cafie to cure, which is the judgement and confcience of a man, whereunto obeyeth at length his will and affectios, whatfoever for a time he may otherwific diffem ble outwardly. I remember your fpeech before of the doubtfull and dangerous inclination of fuch as live difcontented in a State of a differerit religion, efpacially, when either in deed, or in their owne conceipt, they are hardly dealt withall, and where eveiy mass particular punifhment staken to reach to the caule of the whole.

I am not ignorant how that mifery procurech amity, and the opinion of calamicy moveth affiction of mercy and compaffion, even rowards the wicked: the betcer fortune alway is fubject to envie, and he that fuffereth, is thought to have the better caule; my experience of the divers reignes and proceedings of King Edward, Queene Asary, and of this our moft gracious Soveraigne hath tatioht me not a litcle, touchmg the fiquell of thefe aftairs. And fimally (my good friends) I muft tell you plane (quoth he, and this he fpake with great afleveration) that I could wifh with all my beart, that either thefe differencés were not among us at all, or elie that they were fo temperat ly on al parts purfued, 25 the common ftate of our country, the bleffed reigne of her Majefly, and the common caufe of true religion were not eadan-

## (9)

gered thereby. But nuw : and there he brake off, and turned afide.
The Lawyer feeing him hold his peace and de- $\mathbf{L}_{\text {atoyer. }}$ part, he ftepped after him, and uking hum by the gowne, faid merrily ; bir, all men are not of your complexion, lome are of quicker and more ft:rring Spiriss, and doe live to fifh in water thate is troubied, for that th y doe parcicipate the Blackmoores humour, thai dwell in Guinca (whericof The narare and If fuppofe y whive heard and feetic allo fome in pratise of the the L.ani) whole exercife as home is (as fome Gu:ncans, wrut) the one to hunt, catch, and fell the other, and alw yes he fronger to make money of the weak r for he time. But now if in England we fhould live in prace and unity of the flate, as they doe ${ }^{\text {II }}$ Germaily, nowithetanding their differeares nf Religion, and thit the one fhould not prey upon the other: then fhe uld che great Faulcoiis for the Field (I meane the favourites of the time) Gale whereon to feed, which were an inconvenichie as you knew.

Truly Sir, fadd the Genileman, I thinke you Gintlemay. rove iceerer the marke then you weesie : for if I be not decrived; the very ground of much of the fe broiles whereof we talke, is but 2 very prey : *ot in the minds of the Prince or State (whofe intentions no doubt be moft juft and holy) but in the greedy imagination and fubtile conccit of him, who at this prcfent in refpect of our finnes, is permatted ly God, to tyrannize both Prince and State : ap, beng himfelfe of no religion, feedeth notwithftanding upon our differences in religion, to the futting of bumfelfe and ruine of theRealm. The Tyrant of For whercas by the conmand diftinetion now re- Englifh fate. ecived in fpeech, there are three notable diffe. rences of ieligion in the L.nd, the two extreams, whereof are the P'apift and he Puritan, and the

Three differences ofreligion in England.

## (I0)

peligious Proteflantoutaining the meane: this fellow being neither, maketh his gaine of all: and as he feekerh a Kingdome by the one extreame, and fpoile by the other: fo he ufeth the authormy of the third, to compafle the firft two, and the counter-mine of each one, to the overthrow of all three.

Scholar.
The Earle of I. eicefter.

Gentleman:

To this I anfwered: In good footh Sir, I fee now where you are: you are fallen into the comt. mon place of all our ordinary talke and confe rence in the Univerfity : for I know that you meane my Lord of Leicefer, who is the fubject of all pleafant difcourfes at this day throughout the Realme.

Notfopleafant as pittifull, anfwered the Gen. tleman, if all matters and circumftances were wet confidered, except any man take pleafure to jeft at our owne miferies, which are like to be greatet by his iniquity (If God avert it not) , hen by al the wickedneffe of England befides: he being the man that hy all probability, is like to be the bane and fatall deftiny of our State, with he everfion of true rel gions, whereof by indire it meanes, he is the greateft enemy that the Land doth nourifh,

Now verily (quorh the Lawyer) if you fay thus much for the Proteftants opinion of hims what fhall I fay for his merits towards the $\mathrm{P}_{3}$. pifts? who for as much as I can perceive, doe take then felves little beholding unto him, albe. it for his gaine he was fome yeeres therr fecret friend againft you: untill by his friends he was The LordNorths perfwaded, aud chit fly by the Lord Toortb by way policy. of policy, as the faid Lord bolteth, in hope oi greater gaine, to ftep over to the Puritans, a. gainft us both, whom notwithtanding it is pro. bable, that heloveth as much, as he doth the ref.

## (II)

You know the Beares love, faid the Gentleman,
which is all for his own panch, and fo this Bear-

whelp, turnech all to his own commodity, and for greedind lic thereof, will overturn all if be be not ftopped or muzled in time.

And furely uato me it is a ftrange fpeculation, whete of 1 annot pick out the reafon (but onely finues) that in (o wife and vigilant a State as ours Aftange foc culation. is,and in a Countrey fo well arquainted and beaten with fuch dangers; a man of fuch a Spirit as he is knowne to be, of foextrense ambition, pride, falfhoud and trechery; fo borne, fo bred up, 10 o z zed in treafon from his infancy, defcended of a tribe of traytours, and flathed in conIpiracy aga int che Royall blood of King Henries childeen in his ender yeeres, and excrofid ever fince in drifts againtt the lame, by the blood and ruine of divers others : a man fo well knowne to heare fectet milice againd her Majefly, for caufes itreconcileable, and moft dradly rancour aganft the beft and wifet Councellours of her Highnofle : that fuch a one (I f.y fo hatefull) to God and man, and fo markeable to the fimpleft Subject of this Land, by the publigue enlignes of his igrannous purpofe, fhould be fuffered fomany yeeres without cherk', to alpire to lyranny by moft manifeft wayes, ańd to peffeffe himelfif (as now he hath done) of Courr, Courtcell and Countrey, without controlement : fo that notling wantech to him but onely his pleafire, and the day already conceived in his minde to difpofe as helift, both of Pince, Crown, Realm and Religion.

It is much truly (quoth I) that you $S_{2} y$, and it Stidar. miniffecth not a litte mervasle unto many, wherof your Worflip is not the firft, nor yet the telth

## (I2)

The Qaeens Majefties mof exsellent good na. ture.

Gentleman.

Fears that fubject have of my Lordof Leiecter
perfon of accompt winch I have heard difcourfe and complaine. But what fhall I fay-hereunto? there is no man that afcribeth not this unto the fingular bengnty and mof bountiful! good na. ture of her Majefly, whomeafuring other men by her owne Heroicall and Princely fincerity; cannot eafily fulpeet a man fo much bounden to her grace, as he is, nor remove her confidence from the place, where the hath heaped fo infinite benefits.

No doubt (faid the Gentleman) but this grzcious and fweet difpofition of her Majeliy is the true originall caufe thereof: which Princely difpofition, as in her highnefie it deferveth all rare commendation, folyeth the fame opento many dangers oftentimes, when fo benigne a nature meeteth with ingrate and ambitious perfons : which obleevation perhaps, caufed her Mijefties moft noble Grandfather and Father(two renowned wife Princes) to withdraw fometime upon the fudden, their great favour from certaine Sub. jects of high eftate. And her Majeny my ealily ufe her owne excellent wifdome and memory, to recall to minde the manifold examples of peri. lous haps fallen to divers Peinecs, by too mud confidence in obliged proditours : with whom the name of a Kingdome, and one houres reigne, weyeth more, then all the dury, oblpgation, honcliy, or nature in the world. Would God her M3. i ffy could fee the continuall feares that be in her faithfull Subjects hearts, whiles that $m$ nn is a bout her noble perfon, fo well able and likely (if the Lord avert it not) to be the calamity of her Probely blood and name.
Sir Francis Walfingham.

The talke w:ll never out of many mouthes ant minds, that divers ancient men of this Realme, and once a wife Genteman now a Councellour,

## (13)

had with a certaine treend of his, concerning the prclage and deep imp. effion, which her Majefties Father had of the houfe of Sir Iobn Dualey, to be the raine in time of his Maje ities royall houfe and blood, which thu g was like to have been fulfilled foon after (as all the world knoweth) upon the death of King Edward, by the [aid Duatey, this mans Father: who at one blow, procurea to difputch from a pofieffion from the Crown, all three thel iren of the faid noble King. A sid yet ta the madelt of thufe bluody prattic.s gainft her M1jeity that now is and hes liffer (wherein alfo this followes hand was fo far, as fu his age he could thruit the fame) within fixteen cayes before King Farwards death (he knowing belike that the King fhould dye) wrote moft fluttering letters to the Laely Mal) (as I hav heard by them who then wate with her) prom fing all leyalty and true fervice to her, after the deceafe of her brother, with no lefle panted words, then this man now doth uff to Queene Elizaboth.

So ceal: he then with the moft deare ch ldiren of his good King and Malier, by whom he had b inc wo lelle exalted and trufted, then this man is ty her Mijefty. And fo deeply diffembled he then when he had in hand the plot to defroy hem bo h. And whet then (alis) my not we feare and doubt of this his fon, who in eutragious ambition and $d$ fire of reigne, is not in feriour to his Father or to any o her afpirisg fpint in the world, bus far more i: Solent, crucll, vindicative, expert, potent, fubtrile, fi e, and fox I ke then ever he was? I hike w:ll the good arotion propounded by the sir Erancis ${ }^{3}$ ain forefaidGentleman, to hil firend at the fame time, finghara. and doe affure my felfe it wr uld be mofi pleaiant to the Realme, and profitable to Ber Matify, to wit, that this mane actions mighe be colled puts
liguely to riall, and liberty given to good fubjects to lay what they knew againft the fame, as it was permitted in the firlt yeer of Kiny Henry the eight againft his Grandfather, and in the firft of Queen IImund Dudey inary againft his Father: and then I would not

Robert Dudley. doubt, but if thefe two his Angeftors were found worthy to lofe their heads for treafon; this man would not be found unworthy to make the third in kindred, whofe treacheries doe farre furpaffe them both.

After the Gentleman had faid this, the Lawyer ftood fill, Comewhat fmiling to kimfelfe, \&looking round abour him, as though he had bin halfe afraid, and then faid; My mafters, doe you read over or ftudy the Statutes that come forth? have you not heard of the provilo mode in the laft Parliament for punifhment of thofe who fpeake fo broad of luch men as my Lord of Leictster is?

Yes, faid the Gentleman, I have heard how that my Lord of Le:cister was very carefull and diligent at that time to have fuch a Law to paffe aThe Law againf gainft talkers : hoping (belike) that his L. under talbing.

AA'ons of Leiscfler whercof he would have no fpeech.
that generall reftraint might lye the more quietly in harbor from the tempeft of mens tongus, which tat'ed bufily at that time, of divers his Lordfhips actions and aftairs, which perhaps himfelf would bave wilhed to pafle with more fecrefie. As of his difcontentmert and preparation to rebellion, upon Monfieuts firft coming into the Land; of his difgrace and checks received in Court; of the frefh death of the noble Earle of E $\int j i x$; \& of this mans hafly fnatching up of the widow, whom he fent up and downe the Countrey from houfe to houfe by privie wayes, therehy to avoid the fight \& knowledge of the Queenes Majefty. And albeit he had not onely ufed her at his good l king before, for fatisfying of his owne lutt, but alfo married and remarried
remarried her for contentation of her friends: yes denied he the fame, by folemne oath to her MajeAty, and received the holy Communion thereupon (io good a confcience he hath) and confequently threarned moft fharp revenge tow ards all fubjects which fould dare to (peake thereof : and fo fore the concealing both of this and other his doings, which he defired not to have publike, no marvaile though his Lordthip were fo diligent a procurer: of that law for filence.
Indeed(faid I) it is very probable that hisLord fhip was in great diftreffe about that time, when Monfuturs matters were in liand, and that he did many things and purpoled more, where of he defired liffi fpeech among the people, efpecially afterwards, when his faid defignements tooke not place. 1 was my felfe that yeer not far from Warwick when he came thither from the Court a full Mile-content, and when it was thought moft certainly throughout the Realm, that he would have taken armes foon after, if the marriage of her Majefty wuth Monfour had gone forward. The thing in Cambridge and in all the Countrey as I rode, was in every mans mouth: and it was a wonder to fee not onely the countenances, but allo the behaviour, and to heare the bold fpeeches of a $\$ 1$ fuch as were of his faction.

MyLord himfelfe had given out a little before at Killingworh, that the matter would coft many broken heads before Michaelmafic day next; and my Lord of Warwik had fid openly at his table in Greeswich, Sr Thomas Hennige being by (if I be not deceived) that it was not to be fuffered (I meane the marringe) which words of his once coming abroad (albeit milliked by his own Lady then alfo prefent) every Serving man and common companon, tooke then up in defence of his B 4 Lord-

Leicefters preparatives to rcbelon upon Monficurs marriage.

Sholar.
$\qquad$

Io Sit Thomas Layton.
(16)

Eordfaips part againtt th. Queenes Mijefty. Such rurning there was, fuch fe durg and poiting abouk the Realme, fuch amplification of the poweis and forces of cafmerce and other Princes, ready (as was affirmed) to prefent hemfelves unto his aid, for defence of the Realme and Religinn a ganft flrangers : (for that was holdea to be his caule) furh numbring of parties and complices within the Re.Ime, (whereof himfelfe fhewed the Catalogue ro fome of hus friends for their comfort) fuch deb: fing of them that favoured the marriage (efpectally two or three Councellours
L. Treafurer. L.Chamberlaine M.Controler. by name, who were fas to be the caule of all, and for that were appointed out to be fharply pun, fied to the terrour (.f ill others :) fuch letters were written and intercepied of purpofe. impurting great powers to be ready, and fo man'y other things done and defigned. tending all to manifelt and open warre: as I began haruly oo be affaid, and wifhed my felfe backe at Cambridge againe, hoping that being there, my Scholars gowne fhould excufe me from nec firiy of fighting, or if nice, I was refolved (by my Lords gुood le ve fo follow Ariforte, whe preferrech alw. y the Lyos betore the, Beare; affuring my felfe withall, th it hi: Lordship fhould have no better fucceflie in this (if it came to triall) then his Father hid in as bad ? caufe, and fo much the more for that I was prio vie to the mindes of fomie of his friends, who ment to have deceived him, f the matter had bro-

Sir Thomas Hib bot. 1 ken out. And amongh other, there was a certan Vice-prefident in the World, who being left in the roome and ablence of another, to procure friends; faid in a place fecreety mot far from Ludlow, that if he mattir came to blewes, he would follow his $\mathrm{M}_{1}$ flreffe, and leave his Mafter in the briars.

## (17)

Marry fir (qit the Gutiman) and I trow mi- Genfiemanto nif mere would have followed that example For albeit I know, that the P pifts were molt natsed and middoubred of his pa $\mathrm{r}, \mathrm{tr}$ th it c :ufe, for therr open inclimaticn towards $M$ nieur, \& confequeritly, it greater diferedit of the thing it telfe, 1 : was given out every where by this Chimpron of achgion, that lier M2jefties caufe was the Papifts caufe (even as his Fu:her hid done in the like enter- Ieiefters Fathet prile befire him, though all uppn diffimulation, as a traiterouspapift appeared at his death, where he profeffed him felf an carneft Papift : yet was there no manfo fimple in thi R alm, which defrried not this vizard at the firf: rielther yet any good fubject (as I fuppofc) whofieugh her M j fy on the one part, would nor have raken agan ft the other part, what fo ever he had beene. And much more the th ng * it lelfe in controverfie (I meane the marriage of hat roy.ll $M_{1}$ yefty with the brother and heire appirant of France) be ing taken and jucged by the b. A, wifeft and farthfullef Proceflants of the Pealme, to be horth h nourahte, con:ven ent, prif fitableandi ecodfell Wherchyontly, as by a me.ft fovers ine, and prefencremedy, all our maladies both abroad and at home, had at once been cured: ali fo it tg enemues, and domeftic 1 confp raters, all ufferences, all dangers, all feares hat ceafed together : France had b.ene ours meft affured; Spaine would not a little have trembled; Scotland had been quiet; our'comperitors in Etrgland would have quaked; and for the Pupe he meg's have put up his pipes. Oardifirences in religion at home, hid been either lefil, or no geatcr then now they are, for that mo fee berng but a moterace $P$ yeit, and nothing vehement in his cpinions was content with very reafonable condisms, fore humfelfe aad his ftangers oaely in we of their

Sthelbert King Gfienticonvermed An. Dom. 603
confcience not unlikely (truly) but that in time hes might by Gods grace, and by the great wildome and vertue of her Majefty have been brought alfo to embrace the Gofpell,as King Etbelbert an hes. then was by noble Qucen Bertba his wife, the firt Chriftian of our Englifh Princes.

Unto all which fel city, if the Lord in merg fhould have added alfo fome iffue of their royal bodies (as was not impoffible, when firft this no. ble match was moved, we then (doubtleffe) had been the moft fortunare people under heaven, and might have been (perhaps) the meane to havere. flored the Gofpell throughout all Europe befides as our Brethren of France well confidered and hoped.

Of ail whichfingular benefits both prefent and to come, both inRe and Spe, this tyrant for his own private lucte (fearing left hereby his ambition might be reftrained, and his treachety revealed) hath bereaved the Realme, and done what in him lyeth befides, to ahenate for ever and make our mortall enemy this great Prince, who fought the love of her M j jefty witb fo much honour \& confidence as neve: Prince the like, putting twice his owne perfon in jeopardy of the Sea, and to the perill of his malicious enviors here in England, for her Ma jefties fake.

When you fpeak of Monfieur (faid the Lawyer) 1 cannot but greatly be moved, bothfor thefe confiderations well touched by you, as alfo for fome other ; efpecially one wherein (perhaps) you will thimke me partiall, but truly I am not; for that I Speake it onely in refpect of the quiet and good of my Countrey, and that is, thit ly Monfeurs match with out noble Princeffe, hefides the hope of ifliue (which was the principall) there wanted not alfo probability, that fome union or little toleration
religion, between you and us, might have been procured in this flate, as we fee that in fome other Countrics is admitted to their great good. Which hing (no doubt) would have cut off quite all danzers and deal ings from forraine Princes, \& would a ive flopped mane devifes and plots within the "Realme: wheras now by this breach with France, we ftand alone as me feemeth withour any great unition or friendfhip abroad, and our differences at home grow more vehement and fharp then eyce before. Upon which two heads, as alfo upon infinit other caufes, purpofes, drifis and pretences, there doe enfue daily more deepe, dangerous and - defperate practifes, every man ufing either the commodity or necefflity of the time and Itate for his owne purpofe, efpecially now when all men prefume that her Majefty (by the continuall thwartings which have been ufed againf all her marriage) is not like to leave unto the Realme, that precious jewcll fo much and long defired of all Englifh hearts, I meane the Royall heires of her owne body.

Thwartings call you ime defeating of all her Majeftes molt honourable ofters of marriage ? (fand the vither) truly in my opinion you fhould have ufed another word to expreffe the nature of Co wicked a fatt: wherby alone, if there were no other, this unfortunate man, hath done more hurt to this Common wealth, then if he had murdered many thot fands of ber fubjects, or betrayd whole armies to the profefled encony. I can remember well may C Ife, foure treatifes to this purpofe, undermined by his meanes: the firft with the $\mathrm{S}_{\text {we- }}$ then King. the fecond with the Atchduke of AuDiversmarriages of her Ma.deicated. Atr:?, the third w th Henry King of France that now reigneth, and the fourch with the brother and herre of the faid Kingdome, For I let poffie raary

Tolleration in Religion, with union in defence of our Countrp.

Leicefters devices to drive awzy all Sutors from her Maicfly.

Leicefter convinced himlelfe of impudeacy.
other fecret motions made by great Potentares to her Majefty for the fame purpofe, but theid foure are openly known, and therefore I nam: them. Which foure are as w.ll kac wne tohar: been all difturbed by this Dawe?, as they wo earneftly purfued by the other.

And for the firtt three Suters, he drove them: way, by protefting and w : rong that himfelfe whe contracted unto herMajefty, wherof his highnefwas fufficiently adivertfed by Cardinall cbatika in the frift treaty for France, and the Cardina foone after punifhed (as is thought) by this ma with poylon. Butyet this \{peech he gave out thet every where among his friends both firanger and others, that he, forfooth, was affured to be Majefty, and confequently that all other Prince mult give over their fuits, for him, Whereunti notwithftanding, when the $£$ weden would hard. ly give care, this man conferred with his Privado to make a moft unfeemly and difloral proof therof, for the others fatisfaction, which thing I am enforced by duty to paffe over with filence, for honour to the parties who are touched there. in: as alfo I am to conceate his faid filthy Pro vado, though worthy otherwife for his dithonesty to be difplayed to the world: but my Lord himfelfe, I amfure, doth well remember both the man and the matter. And albeit there was no wife man at that time who knowing ny Lord furpected not the falf-hnod, and his arrogant af. firmation touching this contrack with her Maje. fly, yet fome both abioad and at homie might doubt thereof perhàps: but now of lare, by hs knowne marriage with his Minion Dame Lettial of Efex, he hath decl red manifeltly his owne molt impudent and difloyall dealing with his fo. veraigne in this report.

## (21)

For that repore (quoth the Lawyer)I know that Lanyer.
it was common, and maintained by many for divers yecres ; yet did the wifer fort make no account thereof, feeing it came onely from himftlf, and in his own behalfe. Nenther was it credible, that her Majefly who refufed fo noble Knights The bafeneffe of and Princes, as Europe hath not the like, would Leicefters ancemake choice of fo meane a peere as Robin Dualley is, rioble onely in two defcents, and both of them ftained with the block, from which alfo himfelfe was pardoned but the other day, being codemned therunto by law for his deferts, a: appearerh yet in Anno r.R.Mary. publick records. And tor the widow of Effex, I marvaile fir (queth he) how you call her his wife, feeing tbeCanon-law fandeth yet in force touching matters of marriage within the Realmc.
Oh (faid the Gentleman laughing) you meane Gentlemar.
for that he procured the poifoning of her husband in his journcy from Ireland. You muft think that Doctor Dude will difpence in that matter; as he Dofor Dale. did (at his Lordnhips appointment) with his Italanphyfi ian Doctor Iulth, to have tws wives at Doator Iulio. once; at he leaftwife the matter was permitted, and born out by them both publiquely (as all the world knoweth) and that againft no lefe perfons then the Archbifhop of Canterbury himfulfe, whofe overthrew was principally wrought by this tyrant for contrarying his will, in fo beaftly a demand. But forthis controverfie whetizer the

The Archbifhops over hiow for not aillowing two wives to Leacefer his Phylitian marringe be goodor 0,1 leave it to be tried hereafier,between my yong Lord of Denbighe, and Mafter ehilipsidney, whom the fame molt concerneth: for that it is like to deprive hum of a goodly inberitance, if it take place (as fome will fay that in noreafon it can) not only in refpect of the precedent adultery and murder betweene the pirties ; but alfo for that my Lord was coneracted

The Lady Shef. feld now Embafladreffe in Yrance.

The death of Lesieeters firft $44 d y$ and wife.
fit richard Var-成

at leaft, to another Lady before, that yet livetid whereof Mafter Edipard Diar and Mafter Edmum Tilney, both Courtiers, can be witneffes, and con fumated the fame contract by gencration of chil dren. But this (as I faid) mult be left to be triis hereafter by them who fhall have moft interch the cafe. Onely for the prefent I muft advertio you, that you may not take hold fo exactly of a my L, doings in womens affaires, neither touch ing their marriages, neither yet their husbands.

For firft his Lordflip hatha fpeciall fortuid that when he defireth any womans favour, the what perfon fo ever ftandeth in his way, hath if luck to dye quickly for the finiffing of his defirt As for example, when his Lordflup was in fu" hope to marry her Majefty, and his owne wilf ftood in his light, as he fuppofed ; he did but fen her afide to the houfe of his fervant Forfer of Cumner by Oxford, where fhortly after the hat the chance to fall from a paire of ftaires, and fo to breake her neck, buc yet without hurting of her hood that food upon her head. But Sir Ribbin $V$ arney, who by commandement remained wif her that day alone, with one man onely, and his fent away perforce all her Servants from her, to: Market two miles of, he (I (ay) with his man cat tell how fhe died, which man being taken after ward for a fellony in the marches of Wales, an offering to publifa the manner of the faid murdet was made away privily in the prifon : and $S$. Richardhimfelf dymg about the fame time inLon don, cried pitioufly and blafphemed God, and faii to a Gentleman of worfhip of mine acguain. tanee, not long before his death,that all the dively in hell did teare hina in pieces. The wife alfo of Bald Butlley kinfman to my Lord, gave outhe whole fact a little before her death, But to return
unto my purpole, this was my Lords good fortun to have his wife dye, at that tume when it was like to turne moft to his profit.

Long after this he fell in love with the Lady Steffeld, whom I fignified before, and then alfo had he the fame fortune to have her husband dye quedly, with anextreame rheume in his head (as it was given out) but as others fay, of an artificiall catarre that flopped his breath. The like good chance had he in the death of my Lord of $E \int f e x$ (as I have faid before) and that at a time moft fortuate for his purpole; for when he was co-

The fufpitious diath of theLard Shicficield. ming home from Ireland, with intent to revenge himfelfe upon my Lord of Leycefler, for begetting his wife with childe in his abfence(the childe was a daughter, and brought up by the Lady Sbandoies, W. Knooles his wif(:) my Lord of Ley hearing therof, wanted not a friend or two to accompany the Dipury, as among other, a couple of the Earles owne fervants, Crompton (if I miffe not his name) of yeoman of his botiles, and $L$ loid his Secretary, entertained afterward by my Lord of Leivefer: and fo he dyed in the way of an extreame flux, caufed by an Italion Recipe, as all his friends are well affured ; the mikcr whereof was a Chyrurgeon (1s 15 beleeved) that then was new!y come to my Lord from ltaly: a cunning man, and fure in operation, with whom if the good Lady had beene fooner acquainted and ufed his helpe, fhe fhould

The poifoning of the Earte of Effex.

The fifing of a chalde in dane Lecrice belly. not have needed to fitten fo penfive at home and fearefull of her husbands former returne out of the fame Countrey, but might have fpared the yaing childe in her belly, which fhe was enforced to make away (cruelly and unnaturally) forclearing the houfe againft the good mans arrivall. Nenter muf you marvaile though all thefe di-

## (24)

is the cx cellency of the 1talian art, for which this

The divers operation of Roylor

Chyrurglan and Dottor tulio were entertaines fo carefully, who can make a man dye, 13 whe manner or fhew if his kneffe you w. ll: by whoft inftructions in doubt but his Lordfh p is noin cunnug, efpecially adding allo to thefe the coun. Dodor Bayly the yonger.

Death of $C_{\text {ardi- }}$ nall Chatilian. fell of his Ductor Bay', a mana alfo no: a lirted fluded (as he (eemeth) in his att: for I heared himi oure my ielfe in publique $A A$ in Oxtord, and that in prefence of my Lord of Leic Pat, (if I be not deceived) mannam, that poyfon misht: fo be tempered aid given as it fhould not appeare prefently, and yee fhuuld kiil the party sfierwar at what tume flould be appointed. Which arger ment belike pleafed well his Lordfhip, and therte. fore was chofen to be difculied in his audience, if I be not dececived of his being that day prea fent. S), thrugh one dye of a flux, and another of a carirre, $y$ et his imp re eth litele to the mat. ter, but fhewech rather the great cunning and skill of the Aruficer.
So Cardmall chat:lian (3s I have Taid before) having accufed my Lurd of Leicefter in thc $Q$ ieens $M_{1} \mathrm{y}$ : ity, and atee th it, p . firig from London to. wards France about the marriage, died by the waj at Canterbu y of a burning fever: and lo proved Duttor Eay'ite alfiction sue, that poyfon may b: given to kill at a day.
ǹt this the Lawyer caff up his cyes to heaven, and I food fomewhat mufing and chinking of that whith had beene fooken of the Eaile of $E$. fex, whofe cafe indeed moved me more then all the reff, for that he was a veiy noble Gentleman, a grest advancer of true Religion, a Patron to many Preachers and Students, and to wards me and fome of my friends in particalar, he had beene in fome things very beneficiall : and thers

## (25)

1. refore I faid thit it grieved me exereamly to bhare or thinke of fo unworthy a death conerived by fuch meanes to fo worthy a Peere. And fo much the more, for that it was my chance, to come to the underftanding of divers particulars concerning that thing, both from one Lea an Irifh-man, Lea. Robin fonnus, and others, that were prefent at Honnies. Penieress the Merchants houfe in Dublin upon the Key, where the murder was committed. The matter was wrousht efpecially by Crompton yeoman of the botels, by the procurement of $L$ layd pas you haue noted before, and there was poyfoned at the lame tume, and with the fame cup (as given of curcefie by the Earle) one Miftrefle Ales Drapkot, a goodly Gentlewoman, whom the Earle aff: Aloned muth, who departing thence towserds the Earl of Effos her owne houfe, (which was $\mathbf{3} 8$. miles off, the forefard Lea accompabying her, and waiting upon her) fhe begin to fall fick very grievoully upon the way, and continued with mereafe of panes and exieflive torments, by vomiting, untill fe died, which was the Sunday before the Earles deas h, elfuing the Fridsy after; and when the was dead, hit body was fwolne unto 2 monftrous bignefie and deformity, whereof the good Earle hearing the day following, lamented the eafe greatly, and fatd in the prefence of his Ser-1 vants, Ah poore Alice, the cup w is not prepared for thee, albert it were thy hard deftiny to tafte thereof.

Yong Hornies allo, whofe father is Mater of thech laren of har $M$ jethes chappell, being ar that time Page to the faid Earle, and accuftomed to take the taite of his driak (though fince enterrained alfo arrong other by my Lord of Leicefter? if ut better covering of matter) by his taite that he this sooke of the,compournd cup, (though in very 6

## (26)

fmall quantity, as you know the fathion is : ) yet wa he like to have loft his life, bue efcaped in the end (being yong) with the loffe onely of his haire which the Earle perteiving, and taking compaffi. on of the youth, called for a cup of drinke a litele

The Earic of Effex preech to his Page Robin Honnic s.

Gentleman. before his death, and drupke to Honmes, faying, drinke to thee my Rebin, and be not afraid, for this is a better cup of driake then that whereof thou tookeft the tafte when we were bnth poyloned, and whereby thou ba\& loft thy haire and I mutt lofe my life. This hath yong Hennies reportedo. penly in divers places, and before divers Gentle men of worthip fihence his coming into England and the forefaid Lea Irifmman, at his paffage thij way towards France, after he had been prefent? the forenamed Muftris Draykots death, with fome other of the Earles fervants, have and doe mof conftantly report the fame, where they may doi without the terrour of my Lord of Leicefters revenge. Wherefore in this matter there is no doubt at all, though moit extreame vile and intollerable indignity, that fuch a man fhould be foopenly murdered without punifhment. Whas Noble-man within the Realme may be fafe, this befuffered? or what worthy perfonage wil adventure his life in her Majeftres fervice, if th: fhall be bis reward? But, Sir, I pray you pardon me, for I am fome what perhaps too vehe ment in the cale of this my Patron and nobl Peere of our Realme. And therefore I befeet you to goe forward in your talke whereas yo. left. martom.

I was recounting unto you others (faid theGentleman) made away by my Lord of Lecictfer wili like art, and the next in order I think was Sir Ni. colas Tbrogniarton, who was a man whom my Lon of Leiusfer ufed a great whale (as all the Worls
knoweth) to overthware and crofle the doings of my Lord Treafurer then Sir Wi《ians Cice:t, a man sir William Cifpecially mifliked alwayes of Leiceffer, both in re- cill now Lord fpet of his old Maiter ihe Duke of Somer/at, as al. Treaforer. fo for thas his great wifuome, zeale and frigular fidelity to the Realme, was like to hinder mach this mans defignments; whi re fore under fanding after a certane time thit thefe two Knights were fecretly made friends, and that $\$_{\text {Ir }} \mathbf{N}$ ivicholes was 1 ke to detect his doings (as he imagined) which might turne to fome prejudice of his purpofes: (having concetved alfo a f:cret grudge and griefe againlt hum, for that he had written to het MajeIty at his being Embafiadour in Fiance, thar he heard reported at Duke nimuranas table, that the Q reene of England had a meaning to marry her Hurfikeeper) he invited the faid Sir 2 (icholas to a fuppurat his houfe iis London, and at fupper time departed to the Court, being called for, as he fad, upan the fudden by her M jefty, and fo perfforce would needs have sir Nucholas to fit and occupie his Lordhips place, and therein to be ferved as he was : and foone after by a furfert there tak $: m$, he died of a ffrange and incurable vamit. But e e day before his death, he declared to a deare friend of his, all the cir- The poilonirgof cumptance and caufe of his difeafe, whinh he affirmed plainiy to be of poifon, given hum in falet.
2 Salet at fupper, inveying molt earneftly aganit the Eaties crueliy and bloody difpofition, affirming him to be the wickedeft, moft per lous, and peifidious man under beaven. But what :vaileif this, when he had now received the bani?

I his then is to thew the mans good fortune, in reeing them dead, whom for caules he would not huve to live. And for bis are of poifoning, it is fuch

## (28)

now, and reacheth fo t.us, as he holdeth all his foes in England and ellew where, as alfo a good many of his friends in fear therof, and if it were knowne how many he hath difpatched or affaulted that way, it would be marvailous to the pofterry. The The LordCham- late Eale of Sufex wanted not a fcruple for many berlin. yeers before his death, of fome dram received, that made him incurable. And unto that noble Gen. MonfeurSimiers tlemanMonfieur Simiers, it was difcovered bygreau providence of Ged, that his life was to be attemp. ted by that art, and that not taking place (as it did not through his owne good circumfpedien, it was concluded that the fame flould be afualied by violence, whereof I hall have occafion to hay morc hereafter.

It hath beene told me allo by fome of the fee. The poifoning of vants of the late Lady Lenax, who was alfo of the the Lady Lenox. blood Royall by Scerland, as all mea know,and confequently little liked by Leicefert; that a lierle before her death or fickneffe, my Lord tocke the paines to come and vifit her with exeraordinary kindneffe, at her houfe at Hackney, befowng long difcourfes with her in private : but as foone as he was departed, the good Lady fell into fuch a flux, as by no meanes could be fayed fo longe as fhe had life in her hody; whereupon both hic her felfe, and all fuch as were neere about her, faw her difeafe and ending dxy, were fully of op. nion, that my Lord had procuied her difpatchat his being there. Whereof let the women tha ferved hir be examined, as alfo Fonser that then had the chicfe doings in her aff i es, and finct hath beene entertaned by my Lord of Leilut. Per. Maliet alfo, a franger borme, tbat then was about her, a fober and zealeus man in religion, and otherwife well qualified, can fas fomewhat in this poins (as I thynke) if he wers

## (29)

demanded, So that this art and exercife of poifoning, is much more perfeet with my Lord then praying, and he feemeth to take more pleafure therein.
Now for the fecond point, which I named, touchung marriages and contraets with Women: you mult not marvaile through his Lordfhip te fomewhat divers, variable and inconflant w th himfelfe, for that according to his profit or pleaLeicelfers moof variable dealing with women in contrates and fure, and as his luft and 1 king fiallovary (where- marriages. in ly the judgement of all men, he furpaffech, not onely Surdenapa'ius and Nero, hut cven Heliogetellua himiclfe: ) (o his I.ordfl. palfo changeth Wives and Minions, by killing the one, denyring the other, ufing the thrrd for a time, and he fawning upon the fourth. And for this caufe he hath his tearmes and pretences (I warrant you) of Contracts, Precontracts, Poftcontracts, Protrats and Retracts; as for example: afier he had killed his firf wife, and fo broken that contraet, then furfooth would he needs make himContrats. felfe Husband to the Queenes Majefty, and fo defeas all other Princes by vertue of his precontratt. But afer this, his luft compelling to another place, he would necds make a poltcontract Poflcontraas. wihh he Lady Sbeffild, and fo he did, begetting two children upon her, the one a boy called Robin Steffit id now living, fome time brought up at Newington; and the other a daughrer, borne (as is knownie) at Dudey Cafte. But yet after, his consupffence changed againe (as it never flayeth) he refolved to make a retratt of this poitconrr) $c_{\text {, ( }}$, (h) ush it were as furely done (2s I have laid ) as bed and Buble could make the farme) and to make a certaine ncw protraEt, (which is a continuation of uling her for a tume) with the widow of $E[$ ex : but yet to top the mourhes of

[^1]
## (30)

Leicefters two teftrmens.

Scholar.

Varius Meliogabakus, and his moft infamous death.

An Epitaph.
h pittifull permifion.
out-criars, and to bury the Synagogue with fome honour, (for thefe twa wives of Leicefter were merrily and wittily called his old and new Te flaments, by a perfon of great excellency within the Realme) he was content to afigne to the former a thoufand pounds in money with other petty confiderat © 15, (the pittifulleit abufed that (ver was poore Lady) and fo betake his lims to the latter, which latter notwith?anding, he fo ufeth (as we, fee) now confefling, now forfwearing, now diffembling the marriage; as he willalwayes yet ketpo a vord place for a new furcontract with any other, when occalion fhall require.
I Now by my truth fi: (quoth I) I never heard nor read the like to this in my life;yet have I read much in my time, of the carnality and licenciournefle of divers outragious perfons, in this kinde of fin, as namely thele whom you haw mentioned before ; efpecially the Emperour Helingebaliun who paffed all other, and was called Varius, of the varity of filth which he ufed in this kinde of carnality or carnall beaftlineffe: whofe death was, that being at length odious to all men, and fo llain by his nwn Souldiers, was drawn through the City upon the ground I ke a dog, and caft into the common privy, with this Epitaph; Hic projectus eff indomite or rabide libidinis catslus. Here is thrown in the Whelpe of unruly and raging luff: which Epitaph may alfo one day chance to ferve my Lord of Leicefler (whom you call the Bearewhelp) if he go forward as he hath begun, and dye as he deferveth.

But, good fir, what a compaffion is this, that a. mong us Chriftians, \& namely in fo wel governed and religious a Common-wealth as ours is, fuih a riot fhottobe permitred upon mens wives, in a fubject
lubject? whereas we read that among the very Heathens,lefle offences then thefe, in the fame Finde, were extreamly punifhed in Ptinces themfelves, and that not onely in the perfon delinquent alone, but allo by extirpation of the whole family for his fake, as appearerh in the example of the Tarquinions anoong the Romans. And here alfo in our owne Realme, we have regi- Ans. Dom 959. ftred in Chronicle, how that one King Edmin above fix hundred yeeres paft, was deprived of his Kingdome, for mueh leffe ccandalous facts then thefe.

I remember well the flory (quoth the Gentle. Geatleman. man) \& thereby doe eafily mak: conjecture, what difference there is betwixt thole times of old, and our dayes now: feeing then, a crowned Prince could not paffe unpunifzed with one or two outragious acts, whereas now a fubject raifed up but $y$-ltenday from the meaner fort, rangeth at his $p^{\prime}$ eafure in all licencioufnefle, and that with fecurity, void of fear both of God and man. No mans wife can be free from him, whom his fiery luft Lketh to abufe, nor thear husbands able ro refift nor live from his violence, if they thew dinlite, or will not yceld their confent to his doings. And if I frould difcover in particulat how many good husbands he had plagued in this nature, and for fuch delighrs, it were intolerable; for his concupifcence and violence do run joyntly rogether, as in furious beafts we fee they are accuftomed. Neither holderh he any rule in his luft befides onely the motion and fuggeftion of his own fenfualiy; kindred, affinity or any other $b$ n $l$ of confanguinity ; relıgion, henour or honefty taketh no place in his outragious appetite - what he bedt liketh, that he taketh as lawfull for the time. So that kınlwoman, allie, friends wife or daughter,
or whatfoever female furt befides doth pleafe his eye: (I leave out of purpofe, and for honour fake, tearmes of kinted more neere) that mul yeeld to his defire.

The keeping of the Mother with two or three of her daughters at once or fuccetively, isno more with him, then the eaung of anHen \& herchicken togecher. There are not (by report) two noble women about her Majefly (I feake upon fome accompt of texm that know mach) whom he hath not folicitedoy potent wayes: neither contented with this place of honour, he hath defcended to feeke pafure among the waiting Gentlewomen of her Majefties great chamber, offering

Mony well font more for their alluement, then I thinke Lais did commenly take in Corinth, if three hundreth pounds for a night, will make up the fum ; or if not, yet will he make it up orherwife : having reported himfelfe (folittle fiame he hath) that he offered to another of higher place, an roo pound lands by the yeere, with as many jewels as moft
Anne Vauifour. women under her Majelly ufed in England; which was no mean bait to one that ufed traffick infuch merchandize; fhe being but she leavings of another man before him, wherof my Lord is nothing fquemifh, for fatisfying of his lun, but can be content(as they $f: y$ ) to gather up crums when he is hungry, eves in the very $L$ andy it felfe, or other place of bafer quality.

And albeit the Lord of his great mercy, to doe
The punifhments of GoduponLei- him good, no doubt, if he were revokeable, hath cefter to dohimj laid his hand upon him, in fome chaffifement good. in this world, by giving him a broken belly on both fides of his bowels, whereby milery and putrifaction is threatned to him daily: and to his yong Sonne, by the widow of E/fcx (being pilina peceati) fuch a firange calamity of the falling

## (33)

ling fickneffe in his iotancy, * as well msy be a "The childrem of "witnefle of the Parents finne and wickedneffe, adulterers fh il and of both their wafted natures in iniquity : yer be confumed, and
is this man nething ameaded thereby, but accorUling to the cuftome of all old adulterers, is more bidinous at this day then ever before, more gi- God, Sap.3. ren to procure love in others by conjuring, forcery, and other fuch meanes. And albeit for himmiflfe, boih age, and nature fent, doe fomewhat aliame him from the aet, yet wanteth henot will, (ias appeareth by the Italian oinment, procured Whor many yeers puif by his Chyrurgion or Mounrabanke of that Countrey, whereby (as they fay) Whe is able to move his flefh at all times, for keethefeed of a wicked bed thallbe rooted out, fa th dicing of his credit, howfoever his inability be ocitherwife for performance: as alfo one of his Phyfitians reported to an Earle of this Land, that rhis Lordfhip had a bottle for his bed bead, of Leicefters bottle then pounds the Pint to the fame effect. But my Mifters whether are we fallen, unadvifedly? I am athamed to have made mention of fo bafe filthineffe.
Not without good caufe (quoth I) but that we are here alone, and no man heareth us. Wherefore , I pray you ler us returne whereas we left : and on when you named my Lord of Leicefiers Datughter borne of the Lady Sheffield in Dudiey Cattle, there cime into my head a prety fory concerning that aftare : which now I will recount (though fonewhat out of order) thereby to draw you from the further tlirring of this unfavory puddle and foule dunghill, whereunto we are $\cap$ pped, by following myLord Comewhat too far in his paths and ations.

Wherefore to tell you the tale as it fell out : I grew acquainted three months paft with a certain Minifter, that now is dead, and was the fame man that
that was ufed in Dudle, Caitle, for complemen of fome facred ceremonies at the brrth of mul Lord of Leiceflers daughtes in that place : and then A preny device. matter was fo ordaned, by the wily wit of hin that had fowed the feed, that for the better to vering of the harveft and focret delivery of th. Lady She firld, the good wife of the Cafle al: (whereby Letucêers appointed g "flips might wit our other fupprtion have accefie to the plac thould fuipe her felfe to be with childe, andz ter long and fore travell, God wot, to be deline red of a cufthion (as fhe was indeed) and a lietld after a faire ceffill was buried with a bundelle clouts, in fhew of a childe; and the Mininte caufed to ufe all accuftomed prayers and cu. AnaE ofatheifm remonies for the folemne interring thery of : for which thing afterward, before $k$ death, he had great griefe and remorfe of con fcience, with no fmall detctlation of the moor irreligious device of ray Lord of Leiceffer in fund a cafe.

Labyer:

Gentiman.

Lawper.

Gextlewen.

Here the Lawyer began to laugh a pace boti at the device and at the Minnfer; and Gaid, nov truly if sey Lords contrats hold no better, bux hath fo many infirmities, with fubrilties, and br places befides: I would be loth that he were mat. ried to my daughter, as mean as the is.
But yet (quoth the Geatleman) I had rathero the two be his wife, for the ume, then harg gue?. efpecially if the Italian Chyrurgian or Phyfitix: be at hand.

True it is (raid the Lawyer) for he doth na poifon his wives, whereof I fomewhat mervaik, efpecially his firft wife; I mufe why he chofe r2. ther to make her aw ay by open viulence, then by fome Italian confortive.

Hereof (faid the Genteman) may be dives reafon:

## (35)

eafons alleaged. Firit, that he was not at that The firft reafore ime fo skilfull in thofe Italian wares, nor had why Leicefter bout him fo fit Phyfitians and Chyrargions for he purpofe: nor yet in truth doe I thinke that us minde was fo fetled then in mifchiefe, as it lath beene fithence. For you know, that men are sot defperate the firft day, but doe enter into wickedne Te by degrees, and with fome doubt or taggering of confcience at the beginning. Andfo ic it that time might be defirous to have his wife nade away, for that the letted him in his deignements, but yet not fo ftony harted as to appoint out the particular manner of her death, jut rather to leave that to the difcretion of the murderer.

Secondly, it is not alfo unlike that he preferiked mono Sir Ricbard Varsey at his going thither, that fon. ief fiould firlt attempt to kill her by poyfon, and if that tooke not place, then by any other way to difpatch her howfoever. This I prove by the report of old Dottor Bayiy, who then lived in Ox-DoAor Bayly ford (another manner of man then he who now the elder. liveth about my Lord of the fame name) and was Profeffour of the Phyficke Lecture in the fame tlniverfity. Ihis learned grave man reported fur moft certaine, that there was a praCtice in Cumner among the confpiratours, to hive poyfoned the puore Lady a little before She was killed, which was attempted in this ode r.

They feeing the good Lady fad and heavy (as "one that wel knew by her other handling that her "death was not far oft') began to perfwde her, that her difeafe was abundance of melancholly and other humors, and therefore would needs counfaile ber to take fome potion, which fhe abfolutely refuring to do, as fuppeting ftill the wornjthey leat

A pratice for poifoning the Lady Dudley.
day, (uruwares to her) for Doctor Bayly, 'and dea red him to perfwade her to take fome little poin on at his hands, and they would rend to feter the fame at Oxtord upon his prefcription, met. ning to have added alfo fomewhat of their ownd for her comfort, as the Doctor upon juft cavera furpected, feeing their great importunity, and finall need which the good Lady had of Phyfic and therefore he flatly denied their requeft, $x$ doubting (as he after reported) left if they ba poifoned her under the name of his Potion, might after have beene hanged for a colour their finne. Marry the faid Boctor remaint well affured that this way taking no place, t thould not long efcape violence, as after enfue. And the thing was fo beaten into the heads she principall men of the Univerfity of Oxfori by thefe and other meanes: as for that the wi: found murdered (as all men (aid) by the Crom ners isqueft, and for that the being haftily ant obfcurcly buried at Cumner (which was conder ned above, as not advifecly done) my good Lorc to make plain to the world the great loue he bss to her in her life, and what a griefe the lofle of vertuous a Lady was to his tender heart, woul needs have her taken up agane and reburied the Univerfity Church atOxford, with geat pom:

Doa. Babingron and folemnity: that Doctor Babington my Lori Chaplain, making he publike funerall Sermon: her fecond buriall,tript once or twice in hisfpeed by recommending to their memories that verto ous Lady fo pitufully murdered, inftead of fo pitifully flane.

A third caufe of this manaer of the Ladite death, may be the difpofition of my Lords na: ture ; which is bold and viodent where it feareth no refiftance (as all cowardly natures are by

## (37)

nikinde) and where any difficulty or danger appear deeth, there, more ready to attempt all by art, fubtorilty, treafon and treachery. And fo for that the doubied no great refiftance in the poore Lady to "withftand the hands of them which sould offer A to break her neck: he durft the bolder attempt the aramac openly.
Pi But in the men whom he poifoned, for that they A, were fuch valiant Knights, the moft part of them, thas he durft as foon have eaten his feabard, as draw rearis foord in publik. aganint them: he was inforoloced (as all wretched irefull and daftarelly crea ures etrare) to fupplant them by fraud, and by other meas lachands. As alfo at other times, he hath fought to ie doe unto divers other noble and valiant perfonaiges, when he was afraid to meet them ia the ficld, Otas a Knight thould have done.
f. His treacheries towards the noble late Earl of Suffex in their many breaches, is notorious io all England, As alfo the bloody practiles againtt divers others.
But asamong many, none were more odious and miffiked of all men, hen thofe againft Monfieur simeicrs, a ftranger and Embaffadour ; whom firta he practifed to have poifoned (as hath bin touched before) and when that device tooke not place, then he appointed that Robin Tider his man )as afThe intended murder of Mon. ret upon his Alc-bench he confeffed) fhould have fieur Simers by flaine him at the Blackfriars at Greenwich as he fundry meaneso weat forth at the garden gate; but miffing alfo that purpofe, for that he found the Genteman better provised and guarded then he expceted, he deale with certaine Flufhesers and other Pirates to finke himat Sea; with the Englion Gentlemen hisfavourers, that accompanied him at his returne into France. And though they miffed of this pratice alfo, (as not daring to fer upon

## (38)

him for feare of fome of her Majefties thips, whe to breake off this defigament attended by (pecia) commandement, to waft him over in (afety) ye the forefaid English Gentlemen were holdm fourc houres in chace at their coming backe, 2 Mafter Raw'ey well knoweth, being then prefent and two of the chafe:s, namid Clarth and Harm confeffed afterward the whole defigument.

The intended marder of the Karle of $\mathrm{O}_{\text {tmond }}$

The Earl of O, mond in likewf ? path ofterlde clared, and will avouch it to my Lord of Leecriffol face, whenfoever he fhill be called to the famt that at fuch tume as this man had a quarell wiul kim, and thereby was likely to be enfurced to the ficld (which he trembled to thinke of) he firif Sought by all meanes to get him made away b fecret murder, offering five hundred pounds for the doing thereof. And fecondly, when thate do vice tooke no place, he appointed with him the field, but fecreely fuborning his fervane withou William Killegre $\mathbb{E}$ : ${ }^{2}$ Igre to lye in the way where Ormond fhould paffe, and fon to mafliscre him with a caliver, be fore he came to the place appointed. Whid murder, though it tooke no effet, for that the matter was taken up, before the day of meeting. yet was Killigre placed afterward in her Majeftice privy Chamber by Leicefter, for fhewing his rea. dy minde to doe for his Malter fo farthfull a fer. vice.
Schblar.
So faithfull a fervice (quoth I) truly, in my opinion, it was but an unfic preferment, for co facinorous a fact. And as 1 would be loth thx many of his Italians, or ocher of that are, flowuth come nigh about her M,jefties kitchen ; $\mathrm{Fo}_{5}$ much leffe would I, that mar y fuch his bloody Champions, fhould be placed by him in htt Highneffe chamber. Albert for this Gentleman in particular, it may be, that with change of his

## (39)

place infervice, he hath changed alfo his minde and afictaon, and received better inftruttion in the feare of the Lord.

But yet in general, I muf needs fay, that it cannot be but prejudiciall and exceeding dangerous unto our noble Prince and Realme, that any ne man whatfoever(efpeciallyfuch 2 one as the world takech this man to be) fhould grow to fo abfofit lute authority and commandry in the Court, as ki to place about the Princes perfon (the head, the theart, the life of the land) wharfoever people likedh hum beft, and that now upon their deferts perfon. towards the Prince, but towards himfelfe; whofe fidelity being more obliged to their advancer, then to their foverzigne, doe ferve for watchmen about the fame, for the profit of him, by whofe appointment they were placed. Who by thear meanes cafting indeed but bets and chaines, and invifible bands about that perfon, whom molt of all he pretendeth to Cerve, he fhutterth up his Prince in a prifon moft fure, though fweet and fenideffe.

Neither is this srt of afpiring new or ftrange unso any man that is experienced in aftiares of former time; for that it hath been from the begin. ning of all government a troden path of all afpi- fon.
rers. In the ftories both facred and prophane, forsine and domefticall of all Nations, Kingdomes, Countries and States,you fhull read, thas fuch as ment to mount above others, and to governe all at therr owne difcection; did lay this fur the fifit ground and princtple of their purpole; A comparifon. to pofilife themfelves of all fuch as were in place alout the principall; even as he who intending to huld a great City at his owne difpofition, dareth not mak open wat againfthe fame; getteih fecretly into his bands or at his devotion, al the Towns,

## (40)

Villages, Caftles, Footruties, bulwarks, Rampiret Waters, Wayes, Ports and Pafliges, about the fame, and fo withour draw ing any fword aga ntf the fand Caty, he bringech the fame into bond ge: zo abide his will and pleafure.

This did all thefe in the Roman Empire, why rofe from fubje CAs to be great Princes, and top: downe Emperours, This did all thofe in Franc and other Kingdomes, who ar fundry rimes har tyrannized their Pances. And in our own Countrey the examples are manifeft of Voru ger, Havold, Hery of Lancafter, Rubhard of War wicke, Ricbard of Glocefter, lobn of Northum berland, and divers others, who by this meane fpecially, have pulled downe therr lawfull $S_{s}$ veraignes.
And to fpeake onely a word or two of the laf? for that he was this mans Father; doth not 1110 The way of afpi- England know, that he firt overthrew the good ring in Duke Dudiey. Duke of Samerjet, by drawing to his devorion the very fervants and friends of the faid Dike? And afterward did not he poffeffe himfelfe of the Kings owne perfon, and browght hum to the ead which is knowne, and beforethat, to the moft fhamefull ditheriting of his owne royall Sifters : and all this, by puffeffing firf the principall men, that were in authority abous him?

Wherefore fir, if my Lord of Leicefter have the fame plot in his head (as molt men thinke) and that he meaneth one day to give the fame puff at the Crowne by the Houle of Huntingtom, gainft all the race and line of King Hemry thefe venth in generall, which his Father gave before him, by pretence of the Houle of Suffolke, againll the Ch-Idren of King Hexry the eight in partlcular; he wanteth norreafon to follow the fame

## (41)

27 meanes and platform of planting feciall perfons for his parpofe about the Prince, for furely his fada thers plot lacked no witty device or preparation, but onely thit God overthrew it at the inftant : (as happely he may doe this mans) alfo not withAandug any diligence that humane wifedome can ule to the contrary.

To this faid the Gentleman : that my Lord of Gentlemi\%. Leycefter hath a purpofe to fhoor one day at the Diadem by the title of Huntington, is not a thing roblcure in th Celfe, and it fall bee more plainly proved bereafter, But now will I fhew unto you for your inftuction, how well th is man hath foldowed his fathers platforme (or rather pafied the
 feivants, friends, and forces, to ferve his turne as that time forexecution, and in the meane fpace for preparation.
Firft, in the privy Chamber, next unto her M1- Leyceflers pa. jeities perfon, the moft part are his own creatures ( 1 s he calleth them) that is, fuch as acknowledge Cr in the prive. their being in that place, from him: and the reft he fo over-ruleth, either by flutery or feare, as none myy dare but to ferve his turne. As his reign as foabfolute in this place, (as alfo in all other pres of the Court) 25 nothing can paffe but by his admiffion, nothing can be faid, done, or fignifiid, whereof hee is not particularly advertiled : no bill, no fupplication, no complaint, no fute, no fpeech, can pulfe from any man to the Princelle (except is be from one of the Councell) bur aby his good liking! or if there doe, he being admonifhed thereof (as prefently he fatll,) the party delinquent is fure after to abide the. fniart thereof. Whereby he holdech as it were a locke upon the cares of his Prince, and the tongues of all her Majeft es fervants, fo furely chained to his girdle,

## (42)

as no man dareth 10 (ptak atiy one thing that may (ffi: nd him, though it be never fo true or behove. full tor hu M, jefty to know.

I eycefter marrio ed at Waen flead: when her M.ucfty was at M Stuners Heur Dudar Culpeper Phyfitoa Minificr.

No fute ean paffe but by Leycefter. Read Polidore in the 9 , yeare of King Richard t . and you fhall find this pro. cceding of certane about that K. to be puit as a grearcaule of his overthrow.

As well appeared in the late marriage with Dame Effex, which albeit tt was celebrated tw fe: firlt at Killingworth, and fecondly at Waenfteat (in the prefence of the Earle of Warwick, Lord Nortb, Sir Frances Kneoies, and others) and this exactly known to the whole Court, with the vely day, the place, the witnefles, and the Minifter that married them together: yet no man durft 0 . pen his mouih to makeher M jefly privy therun. to, intill Monfieur simiers difclofed the fame, (and therty incurred his high difpleafure) nor yei in many dayes after for feare of $\boldsymbol{L}$ ycefier. Whid is a lubje etion moft difhonorable and dangerow to any Prince living, to fland at the devotion of his fuby Et , what to he are or not to heare of things that paffe within his own Realme.
And herof it followeth that no fute can prevaile in Court, be tt never to meane, except he firf be made acquainted there with, and receive nor unly the thankes, but alfo be acimitted unte a great part of the gane and commodity therof Which, as it is a great inj ry to the futer: foisit a tar mote grea. ter to the bounty, honour and fecurity of the Pume, iy whofe liberality this man feedeth only, and forufieth himfilfe, depriving his foveraigne of all grace, thanks and good w it for the fame, For which caufe alfo he giveth out ordiaarily, to every futer, that her Majefly 18 nigh and perfimomous of her felfe, and very diffictle to graut any fute, were it not only upon his inceffant folicitation. Whereby he filleth his owa purfe the more, and emptieth the hearts of fuch as rece ive benefir, from due thankes to their Princes for the fute obrained.

## (43)

Hereof alfo enfuerh, that noman may be preferred in Court (be he otherw fe neverio well a deferving fervant to her Mij-idy) except he be one of Leyctfers faction or fullowcrs:ñone can be advanced, exeept he be liked and preferred by him : none receive grace, except he ft wad in his good favour, no one may live in counenance, or quiet of life, excep: he take it, ufe it, acknowledje it from him, to as all the favours, grace; diguitics, riches and rewards, which her $\mathrm{M}_{1}$ filly beftoweth, or the Realme can yeeld, muit ferve to purchafe this man private friends, and fivourers, onely to advance his party, and to forufic his faction. Which faction if by thefe meanes it be great, ( (oas indeed it is : ) you may nor marvile, feeing the riches and wealth, offo worthy a Common weale, doe ferve him but for a price to buy the fame.

Which thing himfelfe well knowing, frameth his firts of proceeding accordingly. And fert, upoa coufidence thereof, is become fo infolent and impotent of his lre chat no man may beare the fame, thow junly or ing elly foever it bee conceived: for albest he begin to late a man upon bare furmifes ondly (as commönly it falleth out, ambition being alwayes the mother offurpition) yer be prefecurech the fime with fu.h implacable crucky, as there is no long abidi.g for the party in that place. A; mi ght bee fhewed the examples of many whom hee hath chafed from the Court, upon his only difpleafure, withoat other caufe, being knowis to be otherw.fe, zealous Proteftant. As Sir teyme Boroes, Mi . George Scot, and others that we could name.

To this infolency is alfo joyized (as by nature Leycefters pe it fulloweth) moft abiolute and peremprery de.a - remptory doal: ling in all changs whereof it pleatert him to dif- ing.

## (44)

pofe, without refpet eritise of reafon, order, due, right, futur Jination, cuftome, conveniency, sis the like: whereof notwithftanding Prizces themfelves are wont to have reg ard in difpotition of their minters: as for example, among the fervants of th: Que ies M jefters houfhold, it is an ancient and moft commendable order and cuftome, that when a place of higher roome falleth vayd, he that by fitcecflion is nixt, and hath made proof of his worthin AE in an i frowr place, fhould rife and poffeffe the fame, (ex cept it be for fome exera rdin axy caul.) to the end the no min unexperienced ir untey d , fhould be placed in the highei ronmes the firit day, to the prejudice of others, and differvice of thic Prinic.

Ereaking of or der in her Maic. fics houfhold.

Leycefters violating of all order in the Country abroad.

Which moft re fonabie cuftome this man contemning and breaking at his pleafure, thrufteth into higher roomes any perfon whatfocver, fo he lak his inclinatson, or feele his reward: albeit he nerther be fir for the purpole, nor have beene fo much as Cl arke in ar y inferiour office before.

The like bee uleth out of th : Coure, in all other places where matters fiould paffe by ord ir, efection, or degree : 2 s in the Vniverficies, in ele. ation of Scholirs, and Heads of houres, in Feclefioft Elll perfons, for dignities in Church, in Off. cers,Migifteares, Ste w itds of lands, Sheriffes and knights of Shires, in Burgefles of the Parliament in Commifit ners, Judges, Juftices of the pese, (whereof many in every thire muit weace his li. very) and all other the like: where this mans will muft ftand for reafon, and his letters for abfolate lawes, neither is there any man, maginrate, or communer in the Realme, who darcth not fooner deny their petition of her $M$ jefties letters, upon juft cauke (for that her hig reffe is content sfeet to be fatisfied with reafon) then to refift the com-

## (45)

mandement of this mans xetters, whor wisl admit no excufe or fatisfattion, but oncly ye crecution of his faid commandement, be it right or wrong

Tu this arifered the Lawyer, Now verily, fir, Lewober. you paint unto me a frange patierne of a.perfe $\&$ Potentate in the Coutt: belike thit Aranger, who calleth our State in his printed booke $L_{1}$ ycterten A Leyceftian fem Rempublicam, a Leyscftrian Commoniwealıh, Commonweath or the Commonwealth of my Lond af Leycefter, knoweth muth of thefe matt. rs. But to hold, fir, A -Il wathin the Court: I aflure you that by confi'crations, which you have laid dowae, I doe begin now to percerve that his party mutt needs be very great and ftrong withen the fait Court, feeing that hee hith fomany wayes aud meancs to encreale, enrich, and encourage ihe fame, and foffrong abilitics to tread dowie his enemies. The common Speech of many wantech not reafon, I perceive, which callect him the heart and life of the Court.
They which cal him the heart (faid the Gen:le- Gentleman. man) upon 3 littlo occaffun more, would call beycefter called him alfo the head: and then I marvell what the heart a d life fhumid bee left for her Afajefly, when they take of the E ount. from her both life, heast, and hea 'flup in her uwn Re lme? But the truth is, that ha hih the Cours at this day in almof the fame cafe as his father had it un Kir:g Eumarded y"s, ly the fame dovice, fothe Lord forbid that ever is cone fully to the fame fare, for then we know what enfued to the prom: Il :) and if you will hive an evsient demonefration of thas mans power and far. ur in thatplace, call you but to minde the tin es when her Mjefly upon moll jult and ursent ore fi. ons, did withiraw but a licile her wonted $f$ a. vour and countenance tow or is him : did nite all

A demonftration of Leycefter: tyranny in the Eourt.

Leysefter provideth never to enme in the Qreenes danger aganc.

Anno Regni $z_{1}$. pull downe the other with extirpation of his family.

And this of the Coutt, houfhold and Chimber of her Majefty. Bur now if we fhall paffe from Court to Councell, we fhall find hom no lefee forLeycefters puir. tified but rather more: for albeit the providence rance " the privy of God hath bin fuch, that in this moft honouraCouncell. hle afiemblie, there hath not wanted fome two or three ef the wilcfl, gravift, and molt experienced

## (47)

in our ftate, that have lecti and marked this mans perillous proceedings from the beginaung, (wherof notwithltanding two are now deceafed, and their L.Keeper. placosfupplied to Leyceflers good liking:) yct L Camberlain. (alas) the wildom of thefe worthy men, hath dif. covered alwayes more, then their authortics were able to redreflie : (the orhers great power and violence confidered) and for the refidue of th it bench and table, though I doube not but there be divers, who do in heart detelt his doings (as there were alfo, no doubr among the Councellours of King Edward, who m $\cap$ keth this mans fathers attempts, though not fo hardy as to contrary the fame: ) yat formoft pirt of the Councell prefent, they are known to be fo aftected in preticular, the one for that he is to him a Brother, the other a Fuber, the other a Kinfman, the other an allie, the other a faft obliged friend, the other a fellow or f,llower in fattion, as none will fand in the breach againft $\mathrm{h} m$ : none dare refift or encounter h $\mathbf{s}$ defig:tement : but every inan yeelding rather to the force of his fow, permitteth him to plerce, and pafle at his pleafure in whatfoever his will is once fetled to obrane.
And hereof(were I not flaied for refpect of Come whom I m?y not name) I could alledge ftrang ( $\mathbf{x}$ amples, not to much in aff irres belonging ro fubjefts nnit to privat men, as (were the caule of sn woden forreft, Derbigh of $K$ : imy warth, of his fairc P:C tures foaly procured by Sosibate, of the Atchbifk.

Matrers wherity th. Consell are infoiced to wak at Leyceiter. of (antertyry, of the L. Bargle), of Sir tohy Throgmarton, of M. Rub.nlow and the like; wher in thote of the Councell that difliked his domgs, leaft dared to uppofe themaclucs to the fame, but alfo in things that appertaine directly to the Crown and dignity, to the Seite and Common wesl, and to :he fafery and continuance therof. It is not fecure for

## (48)

any one Councellor, or other of authority, to take notice of my Lords errours or mifdeeds, but with extrcame perill of their owne ruine.
1 eycefters intel-
As for example : in the beginning of the religence with the bellion in Ircland, when my Lord of Leycefter rebellion in Ireland.

Acteons cale now come in England.

Salvatour flaine in his bed. was in fome difgrace, and confequently, as hee imggined, but in fraile ftate at home, he thoughe it not unexpedient, for his better alfurance, to hold fome intelligence alfo that way, for alle. vents, and fo he did: whereof there was fo good evidence and teftimony found, upon one of the firft of accompr, that was there flaine, (as ho. nourable perfonages of their knowledge have affured me) as woild have beene fufficient, to touch the life of any fubject in the land, or in any ftate Chriftian, but onely my Lord of Leycefter, who is a fubject without fubj ction.

For what thinke you? durft any man take no. zice hereof, or avouch that be had feen thus much? durft he that tnoke it in Ireland, de liver the fame where efpecially hee fould have doae? or they who received it in England, for it came to greas hands, ufe it to the benefit of their Princefle and Countrey? Nofarely : for if it had beene but onely fufpected that they bad feene fuch a thing, it would have beene as dangerous unto them asil was to AEteon to have feene Diane and her maidens naked: whofe cafe is fo common now in England as nothing more, and fo doe the exam. ples of divers well declare: whore unfortunate knowledge of too many fecrets brought them quick'y to unfortunate ends.

For we heare of one Salyatour a ftranger, long ufed in great myfteries of bale affiares and ditho. neft actions, who afterward (upon what demett I know not) fuftained a hard fortune, for being late with my Lord in his ftedy, well neare untill

## (49)

midnight, (if I be righily informed) went home to his chamber, and the next morning was found flaine in his bed. Wee heare allo of one Doughiy, Doughty hanged tranged ia hafte by Captaine Drake upon the Sca, by Drake. and that by order, as is thought, bcfore bis departure out of england, for that he was over priyy to the fecrets of this good Earle,
There was alfo this laft Summer paft, one Gaies langed at Tiborne, umong others, for rob. bing of Carriers, which Gates fad beene lately Clarke of my Lords kitching, and had layd ous much money of his owne, as he faid, for my Lords provifion, being alfo otherwife in fo great favour and grace with my Lord, as no man living was thought to bee more privy of his fecrets then this man, whereupon allo it is to be thought, that hee prefumed the rather to commit this robbery, (for to fuch things doth my Lerds good favour moft extend, ) and being apprehended, and in danger for the fame, he made his recourfe to his Honour for protection, as the fafhion is, and that hee mighthee borne out, as divers of leffe merit had beene by his Lordhip, in more haynous caufes beforehim.

The good Earle anfwered his Cervant and deare Privado courteoufly, and affured him for his life, howfoever for outer thew and complement the forme of Law might pafie againft him. But Gates feeng himfilte condemned, and nothing now betweene his head and the halter, but the word of the Magiftrate which might come in an mintat, when it would bee too late to fend to his Lord: remembring alfo the fonall affurance of his fuid Lords word I y his former dealirigs towards other men, where of this man was too much privy, he thought good to follicitc his cafe alfo by fome other of his freends, though not fo

## (50)

paiffant as his Lord and Mufter, who dealing in. deed, borh dilige ally ande effectually in his affaire, found the mitter mored fficult a great deale then either he or they had imagined: for that my Lord of Leycefter was not onely not his favourer, bum a great haftener of his death under hand; and that with fuch care, diligence, vehemency, and irref. fable meanes, (hiving the Law alfo on his fide) shat there was no hope at all of efcaping: which thing when Gates heard of, he eafily belceved for the experience he had of his mafters good nature, and faid, that he al wayes mifrulted the fame, confidering how mach his Lordhhp was in debtro him, and hee made privy to his Lordhips foule recrets, which fecrets hee would there prefendy have uttered in the face of all the world, but that he feared torments or 'peedy death, with fome extraordinary cruelty, if hee fhould to have done, and therefore hee difclofed the fame onely to a Gentleman of workhip, whom hee trußed (pectally, whofe name I may not uteer for fome cauter, (but it beginnech with H.) and Iam in hope ere it be long, by meanes of a friend of mine, to have a fight of that difcourle and report of Gate, which hitherto I have not feene nor ever fiplec I with the Gentleman that keeperh it, though I be well affured that the whole matter paffed in fubflance as I have here recounted it.

Whereunto I anfwered, that in good faith is This relation of were pitty thas this relation fhould be loft, for Garex may lerve that it is very like, that many rare things bee dehcreatiter for an addition in the fecond esition stshistoake. vie to the affaires themfelves, wherein alfo hee had beene ufed an inftumenc. I will have ut (quoth the Gentleman) or elfe my friends mall tale me, howbeit not fo foone as I would, for that he is in the Weft Councrey that flould pro-

Wre it for me, and will not returne for certaine nonths, but after I hall fee him aguine, I will "hot leave hum untill he procure it for me, as hee (a3h promifed: well (quoth I) bur what is beloome of that evidence found in Ireland under my Words hand, which no man dare purfue, avouch,or thehold.
met Truly ( $\int$ aid the Gentleman) I am informed Gentleman. filbat it lyeth fafely referved in good cuftody, to be thirought forth and avouched wheufoever it thall dilicare God fo to dirpofe of her Mijefties heart, as rimolend an indifferent eare, as well to his accufers, Pos so himielfe, in judgement.
Nerther muft you thinke that this is ftrange, foior thit the things are few which are in fuch fort ereferved in decke for the time to come, even a[thong great perfonages, and of high calling, eror feeing the prefent flate of his power to bee doach, and the tempeft of his tyranny to be fo trong and boyfterous, as no man may ftand in Whe rage thereof, withnut perill, for that even da rom her Majefty her Celfe, in the lenity of her ptarincely nature, hee extorteth what hee dofignthich, either by fraud, flattery, falfe information, Saviequeft, protence, cr violent importunity, to fpitice over-bearing of all, whom hee meaneth ugho opprefle: No marvaile then though many ed iven of the beft and faithfulleat Subjects If the Lant, doe yeeld to the prefent tume, with nd doe keepe filence in fome maters, , ibat orherwife they would take it for dutie et io utter.
on And in this kind it is not long fithence a wor. of hipfu'l and wife friend of mone tols mee a teavetimony in ferret, from the wouth of as noble and qrave a Councellour as Ensl ind hauh end, ioyed thele mary hunded ycares: I meane the lase

The Earle of late Lord Chamberlatit, with whom my fait suffer his fpeech friend being alone at his huufe in London, not
of the Earle of Leycelact.

The LordBurgh leg.
twenty dayes before his death, confurred fomis what familharly about thefe and like materes, 2 wath a true father of his Countrey and Commeed wealh: and after many complaness in the b.b of divers, who had opened their griefs unto Corcellours, and faw that no notice would be tak thereof, the fad Nobleman, turaing himict fomewhat abour from the water, (for heelad neare his pond file, where hae bebeld the tuke of a Pike or Carpe) Faid to my friend, Itis enarvell, fir, for who dareth intermeddle himfe in my Lords affires? I will rell you (quoth hi: in coufidence betwene you and me, there is. wife a man and as grave, and as faichfull a Core cellour as England breedeth, (meaning thero the Lord Treafurer) who hath as mach ofb keeoing of Lcycefters owac hand writing, 25 fufficient to hang hum, if either he durft prefor the Came to her Maj: Ry, or her Majefty doe jo fice when it thould be prefented. Bur inded (guoth he) the time permittech neither of then both, and therefore it is in vaine for any manit fruggle with him.
Thefe were that Noblemans words, where you may confider wherher my Lord of Leyceft. be ftrong ihis day in Cnuncell or no: and why ther his fortification be fuffi.sent in that place.

But now if out of the Councell, we will tand Yeyceefers power in the coun. terey abroad. but our eye in the Countrey abroad, we fin fiade as good fortufication alfo there, us we bay perufed already in Court and Councell: and ha well perceive that this mans plot is no fondo indifrceet plot, but excellent well grounded, $2=$ fuch as in all proportions hath his due correfpor. dence.

## (53)

Confider then the chicte and principall parts of this land for martiall affaires, for ufe and somConnodity of armour, for ftrength, for opportunicy, the or liberty of the people, as dwellifg farthe it off com the prefence and a spect of therr Prince, fack arts (I fay) as are fitectl for fuddenenterprifes, vithour dapger of interception: as are the North, he Weft, the Countries of Walcs, the If inds ound about the land, and fundiy other places within the fame : are they not all at this day at us difpofition? are they not all (by his pro:urement) in the onely hands of his friends and allyes? or of fuch, as by other matches have the fame complot and purpofe with him?

In Yorke is prefident the man that of all other Yorke Barle of is fiteelt for ih.te place, thit 15 , bis neareft in affi. Huncingron. nuty, his dcareft in friendihip, the head of his ftEtion, and open competitor of the Scepier.In Bar Barwick. wi-ke is a Captaine, his wives unde, molt affured to humfelfe and Hanungron, as one who ar conden. venient time may as much advance their di fignemerits, as any one man in Englaid.

In Wales the ch efe authority from the Prince Waies. is in his owne brother in law: but among the people, of naturall affiction, is in the Earle of Pembrooke, who borh by marriage of his fifters daughter is made his ally, and by depenelance is knowne to be wholly at his difpofition.

The Weft part of England s under Bedford, a man wholly devored to his and the Puritans faClon.

In Jreland was gevernour of late the principal The Lord Girey. influment appointed for their purpe.f s : both in refpet of his heat and afix etion toward theor defignements, as alio of fome fecret difcontentment which he hath towards her Majeity and the fiate

## (54)

4 Her Matielly (is he faith) for ftmking of Mafict Forteicue, caling him lame wretch : that gricued him fo, (for that he was hurt in her fervice at Zieth)as lie faid, he would live to be revenged.
prefent for certaine hard $\dagger$ ipeeches and ingtere recompences, as he pretendeth: but indeed fea that he is knowne to bee of nature fyrie, and im. patient of fay, from feeing that Commonwealt on foot, which the next competitours for theer gzine have painted our to him and fuch othern more pleafant then the Terreftriall Paradifen felfe.
This then is the HeCfor, this is the Ajax 2ppoie ted for the enterprife, when the tume thall come This mult be (forfooth) another $R$ cbard of $W_{2 x}$ wicke, to gaine the Crowne for Hemy the nint of the Houfe of Yorke: as the other Riciard did put downe Heny the fixt of the Howie of L, anes. fter, and placed Edward the fourth, from whom Huntington deriveth his tule therefore this max is neceflarily to be entertained from ti ne to tim? (as wefee now he is) in fome charge and mar. tiall action, to the end his experience, power, and credit may grow the more, and he be able arthe time to have fouldiers at his com mandment. And for the former charge whicb held of late in lreland, as this manh had not beene called away, bu 2 In scothnd, or for execution of fome ocher fecrect purpofe, * for elfivilere, gainif advancement of therr defignements: So bee well the next inh icritors, or prefent pofieffor.
sir Iohn Parots.
Sir Edward
Horfey.
Sit George Ca.
rew. repr. Sir Amias Paulet Ilands of Gerfey and Gerin ey are in the poffer. Sir Thomas Layton. aftured that for the time to come, it is to bee furo nifhed againe with a fure and faft friend to Ley. cefter and to that faction,
In the Ile of Wight I grane that Leycefter hath loft a grear friend and a trufty fervang $y$ the death of Captaine Harly, but ye: the ma uter is fupplied by the fucceffion of another, no $l_{\in}$ lie al fured unto hisa then the former, ot rather more, through the band of affinity by his wif.. Thie two fion of two friends and mof obliged dependents: The one, by rearon he is exceedingly addicted tn

## (55)

the Puritan proceedings: the other,as now being joyned unto him by the marriage of miftr 's $B \in \mathbb{D} r_{\text {, }}$ bis wives fifter, both daughters to Sir Francio, or (at leaft) to my Lady Knooles, and fo become a rivall, compinion and brother, who was before (though rufty) yet but his fervant.

And the fe are the chiefe Keyes, Fortreffes, and Bulwarkes, wibin.wuthour and abour the Realm, which n:y Lord of Leycefter poffeffing, (as hee doth) hee may be affured of the body within: where notwihitanding (as hath beene fhewed) he wanteth no cue preparation for frength : having at his difpofition (befides all aydes and oar ther helpes fpecified before) ber Majefties horfe, and fables, by intereft of his owne cffice: her Armour, Artillery, and Munition, by the office of bis brother the Earle of Warwicke. The Tower of London and treafiure therein, by the dependence of Sir Own Hoptox his (worne Cervane, as vaready to refcue and fursith him with the whele, if occafion ferved, as one of his predeceff urs was, to receive his Father in King Eawards dayes, for the like effee, againft her Majefty and her Sifer.
And in the City of London it felfe, what this ee man at a pinch could doc, by the helpe of fome of sir Kowland the principall men, and chiefe Leacers, and (as it 10. Were) Commanders of the Commons there, and by the befiiring of Flecizsed his madde Reeor-

Heyward, \& cc. Mad Flectwood, Genrleman. der, and other fuch his inftrumenis: as allo in all other Townes, Ports, and Cities of importance, by fuch of his owne fetting up, as hee thathploced there to ferve his de fignements, and Juftuce of peace, with other, that in moft Shires voe weare his hivery, and are ar his appointrount: the firmplett man within the Realme doth confider.

## (56)

Whereunto if you adde now his owne forces and furnture which hee bash in Kıllingworh Cafle, and other places, as alfo the forces of Hun. tingron in particular, with their friends, followerh, allies and compartenors, you thall finde that they are net behinde in their preparations.

For my Lord of Hunting:ons forwardnefle in the caule (faid I) there is no man, I thinke, which maketh doubt : marry for his private forces, albei they may be very good, fur aty thing I doe knou to the contrary, (elpeciallyat his houfe withon five and twenty miles of Kiling worth, where ons told mee fome yeares paft, that he had furniture ready for five thouland men:) y t do 1 not thint but they are farre inferiour to my Lord of Leyce. fter, who is taken to have exce ffive ftore, and tha:

Xillingworth Cafte.

Kalph Lane。 in divers places. And as for the Caftle lift men tioned by you, there are men of good intelligence, and of no fmall judgement, who repore that in the fame he hath to furnifh ten thoufand good fouldiers, of all thengs neceffary both for horfe and man, befides all other munition, armour, and artillery, (whereof great fore was brought thither under pretence of triumph, when her Myjelty wa there, and never as yet carried backe againe) ano befides the great abundance of ready coyne thert (as is faid) fufficient for any great explort to bet done within the Realme.

And I know that the eftimation of this plate was fuch, among divers, many yeares agoe: as when at atime her Myenty lay dangeroufly fict, and $b$.ke to dye, at Hampton Court, à certaint Gentleman of the Court came unto my I, ordof Huntington, and told him, that for fo much ashe tnoke his Lord to be next in fuccefion after het Mijefty, hee would offer him a meane of grey! helpe tor compasing of his purpofe, afterthe

## (57)

deceafe of her Majeity which was, the poffefion The offer and of Killingworth Caftle (for at that time the fe acceptation of two Earles were wot yct very friends, nor confederate together) and that being had, he fhewed to the Earle the great furniture and wealth whith thercby he fhould policfic for purfut of his purpafe.

The prope fi ion was well likes, and che matter - Ateemed .f great importance, and cour cquentJy celved wrib inany thankis Bur y:t f.crward her Majefty by the good providence of $\mathrm{G} \otimes d$, recovering againe: letred the excurion of the bargain: and my Lord of Huntington haviig occafion to $j$ ryne amily with Leyeefter, had mure rcfpect to his owne commudry, then to his friends Security, (as commonly in fuch perfons and cafes it fallerla out) and fo difcovered the whole device unto him, who forgat not after, from time to $t$ ime, ro plague the devifer by fecret means, untill he had brought him to that poore eftate, as all the world feeth : though many men be not acquainted with the true caule of this his difgrace and bad fortune.

To this anfwered the Lawyer: In good faith Lawyer. (Gentiemen) you open great mylteries unto me, which euther I knew not, or con fidered not fo particularly before $;$ and no marvell,for that my profeffion aud exercife of $L a w$, reftrameth me from much company keeping: and when I happen to be among fome that could tell mee much herein, I dare not cither aske, or heare if any of himfelfe beginne to talk:, left afeerw ard the feeech comming to ight, I be fetched over the coales (as the proverh is) for the Came, under pretence of anather thing. But you (who are not fufpe cted for religidn) have mush greater priviledge in fuch marfers, both to heare and fpeake gaine, which men of mine effate dare not doe: Onelythis I E

The prerogative knew before, that thr. ushout all England my of ary Lord of Lord of Leycefter is taken fur Dominus fac fotum: Laycefler. whofe excellency above others 18 infin:te, whofe authority is abioluce, whofe cónandment is dreadfull, whofe dinike is dangerous, and whofe favour is ommipotent.

And for his will, though it be feldome Law, yet alwayes is his power above law : and there. fore wee Liwyers in all cafes brought unto us, have as gre stregard to his inclination, as Aftro nomer hav ro th. Plance dommant, or as Se men havetoth North Pole.

Leyseffer the Scardinetory to Lawyers in their clients affaires.

For as th: $y$ that fanl, wie diect heir courfe accerding to th fituation aid diriction of that farre whith guideth them at the Pole : and as Aftronomiers who make Prognofications. dot foretell thengs to come, accordung to the afped of the Plans. Inminant, or bearmg rulc for the time : fo we so raide utur Clients batke, ano do prongr:citticate what is like to enfuc of his caufe, by she afpe $\begin{gathered}\text { ot an: inclination of my Loro of Lyyce- }\end{gathered}$ fter. And for that reafon, as foone as ever wee heare a cafe propofed, our cuttome is to a k , whrt part my Lord of Le yeefter is like ro fivour in the matter, (for in all matters 1 ghtly of any 1 por tance be hath a part) or what may be gathered ef his inclination therein: and accord ng to the we give a gueffi, more or lufe, what end will en fue. But his( $n$ y Mafters) is from the purpole: and therefore re turning $t$ your former Speech 2 gaine, I do fay, that albeit I was not privy befot to the particular provifions of n.y Lord and hus friends, in fuch and fuch places: yet feeing hius acrompted Lord Generall over all the whok Realme, and to have at $h$ s commandement 2 : thefe feverall commodites and forces pertainity to her Majefty which you have mentioned be.

## (59)

fore, and fo many more as be in the Realme, and not mentioned by ysu (for in fine he hath al:) I could not but account hum (as hee is) a potent Prince of our State, for all furniture noedfull to defence or offence, or rather the oneiy Monarch of our Nobility, who hath fufficient ncedfull to plunge his Pinice, if he thould bee difcontented, eipecially for his abundance of moncy, (wtich, by the wife, is cearmed the Sinewes of Martiall 1ations) wherein by all mens jndgements, hee is beteer turn thed at this day, then ever any fubject of our land, eiher haih beene heretofore, or lightly may be hereafter, both for bankes without the Realme, and fuffed coffers within. Infomuch that being my felfe in the laft Parliament, when the matter was moved for the grant of a Subfide, after that, one for her Majefty had given very good reafons, why her Highnefie was in want of money, and coufequently needed the affiAtance of her faithfull fubjects therein, another that fate next mc, of good account, faid in mine eare fecrerly, thefe reafons I doe well allow, and 2 m contented to give my part in money: but yet for her Majefties need, I could make anfwer as Leycellers mong one anfwered once the Emperour 'Tiberius in the like cafe and caufe, Abundè ei pecuriam fore, fi à li"berto fuo in forietatem recipiethr; that her Majefty fhould have Monty enough, if one of her fervants "would vouchfafe to make her Highnefle partaker "wihh him ; meaning thereby my Lord of Leycether, whede theafure mult needs in one refpeet be greater then that of her Majelly; for that he laytheth up whalfoever he geteth, and his expences hes acaftecthlupon the purfe of his Proncefle.

For that (faid the Gentleman) whether he doe Geribevim? norno it importeth little to the matter: feeing woth that which hee fpendeth, and that he hord-

## (60)

ech, is eruly and propati, his Princes Treafure: and iceing hee haih fo many and divers wayes of

The infinit waics of gamugg that Leycefter lath. gaining, what fhould be make account of his own pripate expences? If hee lay out one for a thoufand, what can that make him th? poorer? hee that bath fo gondly land, puffiffors, Se'gniories, and rich offices of his ownt, as he is knowne to have : hee that bath $f$ : (pectall forour and atothority with the Prince, as he can obtaine wharfoever he hifecth to demand : he that hath his pan Sutes. Lands.

Licences. and portion in all futes befides, that pafie by grace, or elfe (for the moft part) are ended by Law : he that may chop and change what lanos hee lifteth with her Majefty, difpoile them of al their woods and other commodities, and rack them afterward to the uttermoft peany, and then retarne the fame fo tenter-Gretched, and bare-fhorne, into her Majefties hands againe, by frefh exchange, rent for rene, for other lands never euhanfed before het that poffefleth fo many gainfull Licences to himSelfealone, of Wine, Cyles, Currants, Cloath, Velvers, with his new r.ffice for Licence of alienation,mof pernicious unto the Commonwealith as hee uleth the fame, with many other the like, which were fufficient to enrich whole Townet, Corporations, Countries and Commonwealths: he th:t h th the art, to make gainfull to himfelle Falling out with every offence, difpleafure, and filling out of he her Majefly. Majefly with him, and evety angry countenanec Offics.

Clergy. caft upon him : he that hath his Chare in all off. ees of greas profit, and holdeth an abfulete Mona $p$ ly of the fame : he that diforferh at his will the Ecclefiafticall livings of the Realme, maketh pi. Shops, ne $n=$, but fuch as will doe reafon, of of biif Chaplains whom he lifeth, and retaineth to him. felfe fo much of the living as liketh him beff : ints that fweeperh away the glebe from fo many Be- wath the perín for the reft. He that fo fcoureth the Llaveifity and Colledges where he is Chan. Ynivel隹g. cellour, and lelleth buth Head fhips and Scholars places, and all other offices, roomes and dignities, that by art or violence may yeeld money: he that mak:ch title to what land or other thing he pleafe, and driveth the parties to compound for opprefions. the fime fame: he that takech in wiole Forells, Commons, Woads, and Paitures to himfelfe, compelling the Tenants to make him pay new rent, and what he ceffeth : he that vexerh and opprefletla whomforver hee lift, taketh from ariy Rapizes, what hee liff, and maketh his owne claime, furr, and end as he lift : he that felleth his farour with Princes favour, the Prince, borh abroad in forraine countries, and at home, and fettech the price there of what him. Selfe will demand: he that hath and doth all this, and befides this, hath infinite preferns daily brought unto him of great value, both in Jewsls, Plate, all kinde of Furnimere, and ready Conse: this man (Ifay) may eatily beare his owne expences, and yet lay up fifficiently alfo to weary his Prince when need fhlll require.

You have laid much, fir, ( $q$ inth h. Lawyer) Lan ger: and fu.h mater as toucheth nearly b oth her Majefly and the Commonwealth: and yer in my confcience if I were to plead at the birre for my Lord, I could not tell which of all shefe members to deny. But for that which you meation in the laft pare, of his gining by her $M$ ijeftes favour, both at lome and abroad: Touching his hume. Leycences home grine, it is evident, feeing all that he hath is got- gane by he. M*ten ojiely by the opinion of her Majeftes favour ${ }^{\text {clties favous. }}$ towards him, and many men doe repare unto hime with fat prefents, rather for thit thay fuppofe he may by his faysur do then hutt, if he fecle not

## (62)

their reward, then for shat they hope he will la. bour any thing in their affarres.

You remember (I doubr not) the fory of him that offered his Pance a great yearly rent, to have but this favour onely, that hee might come every day in open audience, and 「ay in his ease, God fave your Majefty, affuring himfelfe, that by ihe opimon of coufidence and fecret favour, which hereby the people would conceive to be in the Prince towari.s him, he fhould eafily get up his rent agane double told. Wherefore my Lord of Leycetter receiving daily from her Majetty grea: ter tokens of grace and favour then this, and himfelfe bring no evill Merchant, to make his owne bargaine for the beft of his commodities, cannot but gainc exceedingly at home by his favour.

And for his lucre abroad upon the fame caule, I leave to other men to conceive what it may be, fithence the beginning of her Mujefties rigne, the times whercof and condition of all Chriftendome hath beene fuch, as all the Princes and Po. tentates round about us, have beene conftrained at one time or orher, to fue to $\mathrm{h} \times \mathrm{H}$ ighneffe for aid,grace, or favour : in all which futes, menule not to forger (as you know) the partes mof able by their credit, to further or let the fame.

In particular onely this I can fay, that I harn heard of fundry Frenchmen, that at fuch time 23 the treaty was betweene France and England, for the re-delivery of Callis unto us againe, in the firlt yeare of her Majefties reigne that now is, when the Frenchmen were in great diffeffe and mifery, and King philip refufed abFolutely to make peace with then, ex cept Callis were reftored to England (whither for that purpofe he had nem delivered the French hoftages :) the Frenchme
saine gaine by her Maieftues favour. flond them ms seat ftead at hat sect fity, tor his for berraying reward, (wh cia y u may well imagine was nos of Callis. (in ill, for a thing of fuch importance) and became a luiter, the peace might be coni luded, with the releste of Callis to the French: which was one fhe "oft mpious fats (tofay the truth,) that ever could be devifed againtt his Commonwealdh.
A imall materinhim (faid the Geatleman) Gertlewas. forin thish did ninm re, bur as Chrift faid of th. J w. : hat they filled up the meafure of heir Fa beisfinis.s. And fo if youreade the ftory of K.up Enwiris tum', you fo: Il finde it mont evio de it, ha: dhas mans facher bif re hin, fold Bul- Leysefers falog 0 the French by lik - reachery. For it thes fold Bul. w is d livered up upon con pofir.o?, w thout ne lo.gne. adif yor resfon, th five ans uwentieth of April; in ih fo thyear of $\mathrm{K}: \mathrm{g}$ ecmard the fixt, when he (I mee . Duk- Duadtiy) had now put in the Earles of AranTower th. Lors Protectnr, and threft our of he del and SourbC uicell whom he litted, as nam ly, the Ear. s of Arundel and Sourhampinn, and fo tovaded the h: spton put our of the Counce!! fil by D.Dudley. whale government himic. f , to fell, fpale, or difo pofe at his pleafure. Wherefore this is but naturall to my Lord of Leycefter by difcent, to make merchindife of the State, for his Grandfather Edmund alfo was fach a kinde of Copefman!

An evill race of Merchants for the Common- Lawjer. wealdh (quoth the Lawyer) but yet, Sir, I pray you (fidd he) expound unto me fomewhint more at large, the nature of thele licences which you named, as allo the changing of lands with her $M$ jeIty, if you can fet is downe any plainer: for they Seeme to be things of exceffive gaine: efpecially firs way of gaining by offending her Majefty, or E 4

## (64)

by her Highnefle offence towards him, for it fee meth to be a device above ali skill or reafon.

Legeefters gaine by talling out with her Maiefty

Not fo (quoth the Gentimar:) for you know that every falling out muft bave an attonement againe, whereof hee being fure by the many and puiffant meanes of his friends in Court, as I have fhewed before, who thall not give her Majefty reft untill it be done: then for this acronement, and in perfect reconciliation on her $M_{1 j}$ eftes $p$ 't fhe muft grant my Lord fome fute or other, which he will have a! wayes ready provided for that purpole, and this fute flalll bee well able to rewand his friends, that laboured for his reconcilemen, and leave alco a good remainder for himfelfe, And thes is now fo ordinary a practice w the him, *s all the Realme obfer veth the fame, and difdrineth that her Majelly fhould bee fo unworthily abufed. For if her Highneffe fall not out with him as often as he defirtth to gaine this way, then he picketh fome quarrell or other, to thew himfelfe difoontented wh her, fothat one way or other, this gainfull reconciliation muft be made, and that often for his commod.ty. The like ant he exercifeth in inviring her Majefty to his banquets, and to his houfes, where if fhee come, hic muft grant him in futes, tenne times fo mu:h ss the charges of all amount unto: Co that Robis playeth the Broker in all his aff ires, and maketh the uttermoft penny of her Mijefty every way.

Now for his change of landr, I hinke I have beene reafonable plaine before: yet for your fuller fatisfaction, you fhall underftand his further dealing therein, to be in this fort. Befides the good lands, and of ancient poffeflion zo the Crowne, procured at her Majeftics hand, and ufed as before was declared: hee uftht the fame tricke for his worit lands, that he pof. feffech

## (6s)

fiffich any way, whether they come to him, by extortmeanes and plaine oppreffion, or through " maintenance and broken titles, or by coufenage of fimple Gentlemen, to make him their heire, or hy Leycefters frauwhit hitrd tulte or unhoneft meanes fo ever, (for dulent change of hee practizeth fore of fuch and thinketh little of lands with her the reckoning:) after he had tried them likewife to the uttermoft touch, and letten them onrto fuch as fhall gaine but little by the bargaine : then gneth he and changeth the fame with her Majefly for the beft lands he can pick out of the Crowne, to the end that hereby he may both enforce her M jefty to the defence of his bad titles, and himfelfe fill his coffers with the fines and uttermoft commodity of bath the lands.
His lieences do ftand thus: firt he got licence Leycefterslisen. for certaine great numbers of cloaths, to be tranf- fes, ported out of this land, which might have beene an undoing to the Marchant tubject, if they had not redeemed the fame with great fummes of mony: fo that it redounded to great dammige of all occupied about that kind of commodity. After that he had the grant for carrying over of barrell flaves and of fome other fuch like wares. Then procured hee a Monopolie, for bringirg in of fweet wincs, oyles, currants and the like : the gane wherof is ineftimable. He had alfo the forfeit of all iwine that was to be drawn above the old ordmaryprice, with licence to give authority to fell above that price : wherin Captaine Horfey was his inftrwwent, by which meanes it is incredible what treafure and yearely rent was gathered of the Vintners throughout the land.
To this adde now his licence of filkes and vel. vets, which only were enough to enrich rhe Major and Aldermen of London, if they were all decaied
S. Ikes and Veiveti.

## (66)

(as often I have heard cive.s Marchants afficme: And his licence of alicnation of lands, which (y) in pare I have opened before) ferveth ham nop onely to exceffive gaine, but alfo for an th. treame fcourge. wherewith to plague whombe The Tyrannicall pleafeth in the Realm, For feeing that witions Jicence of aliena- this licence, no man can buy, fell, pafle, or ale tion. nate, any land that any wates may be drawneto that tenure, as holden in chiefe of the Prine: (as commonly now mo:t lant miy) he callee into gueftion whe twever lik th him beft, be it ne. ver focleare: and under this colour, not oniy the richeth himfelfe without all messure, but rever geth himfelfe alfo, wher: he will, without all order.

Here the Lawyer food Aill a pretty while, b. ting his $l_{1 p}$, as he were aftonifhed, and then fai Verily I have nor heard fo mary and to apparam things, or io odious, of any man that ever lived in our Common wealth. And I marvaile much
Edmund Dudley. of my Lord of zerceper, that his Graneffathers fortune doth not move him much, whe lefthy head in the beginning of King Henry the eights dayes, for much leffe and $f$ ewer offences, in ths fame kind, committed in the time of $\mathrm{K} \quad \mathrm{g}$ Hent the feventh: for he was thought to be the inventour of thefe poolings and moleftations, where with the p-ople were burthened, iu the latter day of the faid King. And yet had he great pretene of reafon to alledged for himfelfe : in that thefis exactions were made to the Kings ufe, and not to his, (albeit no doubt) but his own gaine was alfo there. Mifter Stow writeth in his Cronicle, Edmund Dudleis that in the time of k s imprifonment in the Towbooke written in the Tower. er, he wrot a not b: hook, intituled The tree of Common wealth, which b ook the faid Stuw (ath, that hee hath delivered to my Lord of Legreflin

## (67)

many years agane. And it the faid book be fo notable as Matter Stow affirmeth : I marvile that his Lord in (o many yeares, doth not publifh the「ame, for the glory of his anceftors?
It may be (latd the Gentleman) that the fecrets Gentlemas\% therein contained, be fuch, as it feemeih good to 'my Lord, to ufe them onely himfelfe, and to gather the fruit of the tree into his owne houfe alone For if the tree of the Common-wealth in $E$ dmand Dudlis book, be the Prince and his race : and the fruits to be g whered from that tree, bee riches, hon urs, dignities, and preferments : then no doubt, but as the writer Edmusd was cunning therein : fo have his two followers, Iobn and Robert, well ftudied and practized the fame, or rather have, exceeded and farre $p$ ffed the anthour humfelfe. The one of them gathering fo e.agerly, and with fuch vehemency, as he was like to have breken down the maine boughes for greedinefle: the other yet plucking and heaping fo faft to himfilfe and his friends, as it is and may be, moft junly doubred, that when they have cropped all they can, from the tree $\mid$ eft them by their father The fupplanting Eamund (I meane the race of King Heary the fe- of the race of venth.) then will they pluck up the Stemme it felf Henry the 9. The inferting of Huntington. by the rootes, as unprofitable : and pitch in his place another Trunke that is the line of Hantington) that may bugin to feed a new, with fefh truits agane, and fo for a time content their appettes, untill of gatherers, they may become trees, (which is their fin $j l l$ purpofe) to feed themfelves at therrown difcrecion.

Andhowfoever this be, it cannot be denied, but Edmund Di:d. that Idm. Dudlis brood, have learned by this to $k$, and by other meanes to be more c inning gatherers, then ever their firft progenitor was, that made the book. Firft for that he made profeffion to $\mathrm{g}_{3}-$
thee to his Prince (b hugh wickedly) and there men make demonstration, that they have. there for themselves : and that with mud more iniquity. Secondly, for that E. maund Dud ley th ugh hie got bimfelfe neare about the tree, yt was he content to land on the ground and to ferve himelelfe from the tree, as comma dirty was offered: bur his children not elites. ming that Safe gathering, will reeds mount alof upon the tree, to pall, crepe, and rift: is their pleafure. And as in the fecond point the

Rorthimberland and Leycefter wrath their Prince will nae be ruled.

## Jawayt.

Gentlemen.

Eieyeefier Matter of Att ${ }^{\text {and }}$ a curaxing L'ogitioner. Sone Isbn Dudley was more fubtile, then $\mathbb{E}$. mind the Father : fo in a third point, the Ne . phey Robert Dudley is more crafty then hey both. For that, thee freeing the vil fuccalfe of thole two that went before him, thee hath provided together fo much in convenient time, and " make humfelfe therewith fo far and ftrong, (wherein the other two failed) as he will nevi be in danger more, to be called to any accompt for the fame.

In good faith Sir (quoth the Lawyer) I thanks you heartily, for this plẹafant difcourfe mon Ei mund Dudleis tree of Common wealth. And by your opinion, my Lord of Leycefter is the mott learned of all his kindred, and a very cunning Logitioner indeed, that can draw for himfelfe fo commodious conclusions, out of the perillous promiffes of his progenitors.
No marvail (quoth the Gentleman) for that his L. is Matter of Art ia Oxford, and Chancelour befides of the fame V niverlity, where he lith fore (as you know) of many fine wits and good Logitionersat his commandement: and where he learneth not only the rules and art of cunning, gatering : hut for the very practize (as I have touched before) (weeing there is no one Colledge, or other

## (69)

hing of commodity w thin that place, where rence he hath not pulled, whatfoever was poffibly o he grthered, euther by art or violence.

Tuuching Oxford (laid I) for that I am an Scholax. Univerity man my filfe, and have both experience of Cambridge, and good acquaintance with divers fudents of the other univerfity: I can tell you enough, but in fine all tendeth to this conclufion, that by his Chancellorfhip, is cancelled al- feycefters abui molt all hope of good in thex Univerfity: and by of Oxford. bisprotettion, it is very like foone to come to deftruction. And furely if there were no other thing, to declare the oddes and difference het wixt The Lord him and our Chasceilour, (whom he cannot Treafures. beare for that every way he feeth him, to p: fie him in all honour and vertue) it were fufficient to behold the prefent ftate of the two Uaiverfities, whereof they are heads and governours.

For our own, I w, II not f:y much, left I might Cambridge perhips feeme pa tuall: but let the thing feeak for it felfe. Confider the fruit of the Garden, and ther!'y you may judge of th. $G$ irdiners diligence. Lonke upon the Bifhopriks, Paftorthys, and Pulpits of England, and fee whence priscipally they have received ther furniture for advancement of the Gofpell. And on the contrary fide, looke upon the Seminariee of Papiftry at Rome and Rhems, upon the Colledges of Jefuifts, and other companies of Papifts beyond the feas, and fee where-hence thiy are, e'pecially, fraught.

The Priefts and Jefwifts here execured within the land, and other that remaine either in prifor, or abroad in corners : are they not all (in a manner) of that llnivesfiy? I fpeak not to the difgrace of any good that remaine there, or that have iffued out ihunce into the Lords Vineyard: but for

## (70)

the moft part there, of this our time, have they not either gone bey nd the feas, or left their pla. ces for difcontentment in Religion, or elfe be. come Servingmen, or followed the bare name of Law or Fhyfick, without greatly profiting thete. in, or furthering ihe fervice of Gods Church, of their Commonwealth ?

And wherehence (I pray you)enfueth all thing but by reafon that the chiefe Givernour theted The diforders of is an Atheift himfelfe, and ufeth the place onel Oxford by the wickedneffe of their Chancellor for gaine and Soorle? for horeheace it commeti, that all good order and difcipline is diffulved in that place, th: fervour of fludy extinguifhed: the publigue Lectures abandoned (I meane of the more part:) the Tavernes and Ordinary tablea frequented: the apparell of Students growale monftruous: and the flatutes and good ordinana both of the Univer fity and of every Colledge and Hall in private, hroken and infrituged at my Lords good pleafure, without refpect ercher of oath, caflome, or reafon to the contrary. The headsand Officers are put in and out at his onely difcretions and the Scholats places either told, or difofed by his letters, or by thefe of his fervants and fol. lowers: nothing can be had there, now, with out prefent money: it is as common buying and felling of places in that Univerfity, as of horfes in Smithfield : whereby the good and vertuous are kept out, and companions thruft in, fit to ferve his Lord afterward, in all affaites that fhall occurre.
Leafes.
And as for leafes of Farmes, Woods, Pafturess Perfonages, Bencficcs, or the like, which belong any way to any part of the Univerfity, to let or beftow, the fe, his Lord and his Sewants have fo flec. ced, florne, and fcraped already, that there remaineth litule to feed upon hereafier : albeit hee

## (71)

want not tl his flies and intelligences in the place, to advertise him from time to time, when any new little morel is off. red. And the princepall inftruments which for this purpofe he hath Leycefters ing fruments. had chare before his, have been two Phyfitians, Bay') and rulpeper, both knowne Papifts a little whale agoe, but now just of Galena religion, and fo much the firer tor my Lords humour for his Lordfip doth al res covet, to be fur a tithed with eertaine chnfen men about h m, for divers affairs: mas the fe two Galen fits on the Ulivenfiny: Dee and A en (two htheits) for figuring and conjuring: Iwlio the Italiait, and Log as the Jew, for po:foning, aud for the art of deitroying children in women bellies: Verneis for murdering: Digbies for 4. Bands: and the like in occupations which his Lor'fhip exercifeth.

Whecer, re to rerurne to the Speech where we begin : molt clare it is, that my Lord of Ley:efer hat meanes to gamine and gather aldo by the Univerlity, as we as by the country abroad. Whee in( is I am told) he beareth himfelfe fo absolute a Lord, is it he were their King, and not theirChancolour. Nay far more then if he were the generall and particular founder of all the Colledges and other houfes of the Univerfity;no man daring to contrary or interrupt the leas word or fignificotton of his will, but with hisexcreame danger: which is a proceeding more fit for Pbalaris the tyrant, or fame Governour in Tartary, then for a Chancellour of 3 learned Univenfary.

To this answered the Lawyer, for my Lords Langer: wrath towards Such as will not fard to his jugtent and opinion, I can my felfe be a fufficierit waneffe, who having had often necafion to deale for composition of matters betwixt his Lordhip and others, have ferne by experience, that al-

## (72)

wayes they have fped bett, who ftood le aft in con tention with him, whatforver their caufe woul For as a great and viclent river, the morent flopped or contraried, the more it rifeth and Sutis leth bigge, and in the end, dejeeteth with mont force the thing that made refiftance : fo his Lort

The perill of flanding with Leycefter in any thing. fhip being the grext and mighty Potentate of til Realme, and accuftomed now to have hisw. in all things, cannot beare to bee croflid or retifted by any man, though it were in his ownent ceffary defence.

Hereof I have feene examples in the caufesti Snowden foreft in Wales, ot Denbighe, of $\mathrm{K}_{\mathrm{i}}$. lingworth, of Drayton, and others: where ing parties that had intereft, or thought themfeley wronged, had beene happy if they had yeelded as the firft to his Lordfhips pleafure, without furbite queftion: for then had they efcaped much troubli, charges, difpleafure, and vexation, when byref. ftance they incurred, to the ir great ruine, (and

* Pooremen re- * loffe of life to (ome) and in the end were faine fifting Warwicks to fubmit themlelves unto his will, with far worle inclofure at North hall were hanged for his pleafure by Ley- behold, but yet furk is my Lords difpofition. cefters aurhority Gentexsas. Great Tyranny, conditions then in the begining were offetel unto them : which thing was pistifull indeedu

A noble difpofition (quoth the Gentieman,) that I muft give him my coat, if hee demandite Same, and that quickly allo, for feare left if I tas ger or make doubt thereof, hee compell me io yeeld both coat and doublet, in penance of my ftay. I have read of fome fuich Tyrants abroad in the world:marry their end was alwayes áccording to their life, as it is very like that it will be alfo in this man, for that there is (mal hope of tus dnend ment, and God paffeth not over commonly fud matters unpunifhed in this life, as weil as in the life to come.

But I priyyou fir, feeting mention is now made of the former oppieffions, fo much talked of throughout the realm, that you will take the pains to explain the fubfance therof uaso $\mathrm{me}^{\text {; }}$ for albeit in generall, every man doth know the fame, and in heart doe decelt the tyranny shere of ; yet we abroad inche Courierey, doe dot underftand it fo well anil diftincty as you that be Lawyers, who have feene and anderttood the whole proceffe of the fame.
The cale of Killingworth and Denbigh (faid the Lamper. Lan yet ) are much alike in matter and manner of proceeding, though diffierent in time, place and Importance. Fur that the Lordh'p in Denbigh in The Lordhip of Norihw iles, being given unto him by herM ijefly i great while agoe, at the beginning of his r:fing, "which is aLordfhip of fingular great importance therein.。 in that Country, having (as l have heard) well neere 200, worfhpfu!! Gentlemen frecholders to the fime: ) the tenants if the place, confidering the profent ftate of things, and having learned the wangry difpofition of their new Lord; made a commen purfe of a thoufand pouids, to prelene im withall, at his firlt entrance: which though ae recelved (as he refuleth nothing;) yer accounered he the fum of [malleftett for fatisfietion of this appetic; and therefure applied bimfelfi, not onely to make the utermolt thar he could by Leafes, and fuch lise wayes of commoditie; bue $w_{2} l$ fo he w suld needs enforce the Frecholders to "rate thetr old rent of the Lordflap, from two hundreth 'and fify pounds a yeere, or thereabouts (at whith rate he had received the lams in gife from her M :jefty, ) unto eight or nine hundrech pounds by the yeere, For that he had found our (ferfooth) an old record, (as he fric) whereby he could prove, that in anctent time F

## (74)

long paft,that Lordhhip had yeelded fo much oil rent : and therefore he would now enforce the prefent tenants, to make up fo much againe upo their lands, which they thought was againft at reafon for them to doe: but my Lord perfon would have it fo, and in the end compelled then to yeeld to his will, to the impover:hing of all ix whole Countrey about.
The Manor of The like proceeduig he ufed with the tenno Killingworth and about K.llingworth, where he recetved the ii Leyceflers eppreffion therc. Lorifh'p and Cafte from the Prince, in gift twenty foure pounds yeerely rent or thereaboes hath made it now better then five hundrech yeere : by an old record alfo, found by great fee tune in the ho'e of a wall, as is given out (fort haih fingular guod luck al wayes in finding outw cords $\mathrm{f} \pi$ his purpofe) by vertue whereof, he han taken from the tenants round about, their $L_{\text {and }}$, Woods, Pa fures and Commons, to make himflite Patkes, Chaces, and other commodities therwitt tn che fubverfion of many a good family, whif was mintained ihere, before this devourty foor in that Countrey.

The caufe of Snowden foreft moft pitifulit

But the matter of Snowden Foreft, Coch all the reft, both for cunning and cruely: tragedy whereof was this, he had learned by intelligencers abroad (whereof he had great th in every part of the Realme) hat there wal goodly ancient Foreft in Nor h wales, wha hath almoft infinite borderers about the fime for it lyeth in he middeft of the Councrey, by ginning at the hils of Snowden (whereof ither his name) in Carnarvanfhire, and rea heth m| ry way towards divers other fhires. When $n$ Lord heard of this, he entered prefently into old de conceit of a fingolar great prey: going to berly jefly, fignified that her higbneffe was often uing

## (75)

abured, by the incroachu"g of fuch as dwelt upon her Forelts, which was necefliry to be reftrained; and cherefore befeeched her M jeity to beftow upon bim the incrochments only, which he fhould be able to finde out upon the Fureft of Snowden, which was granted.

And thereupon he chofeout Commiffioners fit for the purpofe, and fent chem into Wales, with be like Commiffion as a certaine Empirour was yonr to give his Maj - Atrates, when they departed iom him to g$^{\text {verere, }}$ as Shetomius writeth, Scitis Anoldeyranniwid vcimn of quabus opw habeo. You know what I call C ommiffion would have, g id wh it I have need of. Which reWmmendation, th.f Commiffioners taking to teryl, omatied no dhagence in execution of the IInc; and fogong into Wiles, by furh meanes as hey ufed, of feeting one man to accufe another; rough quickly all the Coustrcy round about in fire or tuure theres, withan the compzfie of Fo.reft ground; and fo entred upon the fame, for my Lord of timisirs. Whereupon, when the people were ans ard, sad expetted what order my Lord umfelfe would take thete in : his Lord was fo fas Qifrour refufing any part of chat, which his Commffioners had profented and offired him: as he yould yet further firetch the Foreft beyond the tex, into the Ine of Anglefey, and make that alfo A rediculons deTrithin his compaffe and bounder.
Which when the Commonalty faw, and that nomiltation of exceffire avariee hey proficed nothing by their complaining and rying ouc of this tyranny : they appoinced to end lome certaine number of themfelves, to Londún, to make fupplication to the Priace : and fo they did; choofing out for the et purpofe a tozen Gendemen, and many mare of the Counmons of the Countrey of Llin, to deale for the mave, Who coming to Liodon, and extabiting

A Gingular appresfion.

Leyce? ereatmiy hated in Wa!cs.
a moft humble fuppination to her Mijefty fou redrefle of their oppreffion : recerved an anfwe, by the procurement of my Lord of Lejcefier, thui they fhould have juttice, if the commonaly would returne home to their houfes, and the Geatlemear remaine there, to folicite the caute. Which as foone as they had yeelded unto, the Gentlensen were all taken and calt into prifog and there kept for a great fpace, and afterwzi were fent downe to Ludlow, (as the place mol errinent of all thefe Countries) there tolwer: pupers of perjury, and receive other punifhmem of infany, for their complaining: which punle ments nor wi thftanding, afterw ard upon great fur of the parties and their freends, were rurnedirs great fines of money, which they were confla. ned to pay, and yet befides to agree allo we my Lord of Leyceter for their owne lands, 4 knowledging the fame to be his, and foto boy of him againe.

Wherby not onely thefe private Gentlemen, be: all the whole Countrey thereabout, was and is( a mannet) utterly undone. And the participatul of this mjury, reacheth fo far and wide, and ind generall in thefe parts, as you fhall fcarce finder mian that cometh from that coalt, who feclechay the fmarr thereof; being either impoverifury beggered or rainated thereby.

Where by I aflure you that the hatred of all tor Countrey, is fo univerfall and vehement agmu my Lord : as I think never thing created by $G$ w- fo odious to that Nation, as the very name my Lord of Letestitr is. Which his Lordfhip w. \& wing, I doube not, but that he will takehas $\mathrm{h} \subset \mathrm{w}$ he go thuther to dwell, or โend thithert polterity.

For his pofterity (guoth the Gentleman) IGX

## (77)

pof he hath little cauic to be folicitour ; for thas God himfelfe taketh car commnnly, that guods and honours fo goten and mazatamed..s his be, fall never trouble the third heire, Mariy thin 3 m felfe, I confsfie (the mater ftanding as you i.v) that he hath reafon to forbeare that C untry, and to leave off his building begun at Denbigh, as I The end ofty: beare fay be hath done for that the univeifall ba- rants.
tred ot a people, is a perilous matter; and if I were in his Lordfhips cafe, I fhould ofren thinke of the end of Nere ; who afeer all h:s glory, upon fury Nero. of the people was adjudged to have his head thrult into 2 Piloiy, and fo to be beaten to death with rods and thengs.
Or rather I mould feare the fucceffc of Vitellius the third Emperor after Tevro, who for his wickednefic and oppreffion of the people, wast : ken by them at length, when fortune began to farte $h$ m, and led our of his Palace naked, with hooks of Iron faftned in his $\mathrm{Al}(\mathrm{fh}$, and fo drawn through the City with infamy, where, loden in the ftrcets with fith and ordure caft upon him, and a prick pue under his chin, to the end he frould not looke downe or hide his $f$ ce, was brought to the banke of Tyber, and there, afier many hundred wounds rectived, was caft into the river. So implacable a thing is the furour of a multitude, when it is once fitred, and hath place of reverge. And fo heavy is the hand of God uporstyrants in this world, when it pleafecth his divine M.jefty to take revenge of the fame.
I haveread in Leander, in his defeription of It1ly, how that in Spoleto (If I be not deceived) the ch:efe City of the Country of Umbria, thete was a frange tyrant; who in the time of his profecrity,

A moft terrible revenferalken upon a tyiant。 contemned all men, and forbate to injury in min that camewishin his claws; efteeming humidelf fore

## (78)

enough for ever being calied to render accountin this life, and for the sext he cated hutle. But God upon the fudden turned upfide-downe the wheck of his felictry, and caft him into the peeples handsh whe tooke him, and bound his naked body upan a planke, in the Mirkes. place, with a fire and iron-tongues by him : and then made proclams. rion,shat feeing this man was not orherwife able to make fatisfation, for the publıque injumies that he had done ; every private perfon annoyd by him, fhould come in order, and with the how burning tongues there ready, fhould take of hus flefh fo much, as was correfpondent to the inik ry received, as indeed they did untill the miferabie man give up the ghoft, and after too : as thisun thor writeth.
But to the purpofe : fecing my Lord areethlii tle for fuch examples, and is become fo havi

Leycefters op. greffion of parei enlarmen. now, as he make:h no accourt: to injury and of preffe whole Countries and Commonalties soge. thers ; it fhall be bootleffe to fpeake of his pro. ceedings towards partucular men, who bave no fo great frength to r fifit, as a multitude hith And yet I can aflure you, that there are foma and fo pitifull things publifhed daily of his th. ranny in this kinde; as doe move great compil fion towards the party that doe fuffer, and hay. sour ag ainft him who fhmeth not daily to ofte fuch injuity.

As for example : whofe heart would not blew to heare the cafe before mentioned of Maltr Mafter Robinfon Rebinfen of Staffordfhire ; a proper yong Gentr man, and well given both in religion and outre vertues ; whofe Father died at Newharen, in her Majefties fervice, under this mans brotherike Earle of Warwick; and recommended at his deter this his eldefSon,to the fpecial proretion of Li-
tefler and his Brother, whofe fervant alfo this Rolimfon hath bin, from his youth upw ard, and fpent the moft of has living in his fervice. Yet notwithfunding all this, when Robinfons Lands were intangled with a certaine Londoner, upon intereft for his former maintenance in the ir fervice, whofe ai title my Lord of Leiceiter (though craftily, yet not covertly) underFerrib his cloak, had gotten to him"felfe : he ceafed not to purfue the poore Gentlemaneven to imprifonment, arraignment, and fenrence of death for greedineffe of the faid living; " engether with the vexation of his brother in law Mafter Hercouit, and all other his friends. upon Mafer Hascourt. pretence, forfooth, that there was a man fline by Robingons party, in defence of his owne poffeffion againft Lemefers istruders, that would by violence im breake into the fame.

What fhall I fpeake of others, whereof there 4) would be no end? as of his dealing with M ister Q Richard Lee, for his Manor of Hooknorton (if I faile not is the name: ) with Matter Ludowick Ludowisk Grivel Grivell, by feeking to bereave him of all his living at once, if the drift had taken place ? wilh George George Witney. fir Winey, in the bchalfe of Sir Heary Leigb, tor infor$t$ cing him to forgoe the Controlerlhip at Woodor flock, which he holdeth by Parent from King Hemy the fevenih? with my Lord Barkliy, whom iord Barkley. heenforced to yeeld uphis lands to his brother wawich, which his anceftors had hel $\$$ quictly for almoft two hundrech yeeres together ?

What flatl I ray of his intollerable tyranry Acchb:finop of upon the laft Ar-hbishop of Canterbary:f. rD, Canteibury. Aor Iulis his Cike, and that in fo foule a matter ? Vpon Sir lobia Tbrearmarton, whom he broteght Sis Iohn Throgpitifully to his grave before his time, ty contuna- maton. all vexacions, for a peece of frihfull Cervice doze by him to his Countrey, and to all the line

$$
\text { F }_{4} \text { of }
$$

## (80)

Lanc.<br>Gifferd.<br>Sir DrewDrewry<br>$$
95
$$ perfecuting of Sir Drews Drew, y, and many othet Courtiers, bothmen and women ? All thefe(l fay) and many others, who daily fufter inguries, rapties and oppreffions at his hands, throughom the Realme, what fhould it availe to name them in th:s plate? feeing neither his Lord careth ang thing for the fame, neither ihe parries agrieved ani like to attain any ealt releafe of affletion there by, hut rather double oppreffion for their complaining.

Wherefore to return again wheras we began;
The prefenctate of my Lord of Leycefter.

Leicefters wealth you fee by this litele, who, and how great, \& what manaer of man,my Lord of Leycffer is this day, in the flate of England. Xou fee, and may gather, in fome part, by that which hath bin fpoken, his wealith, his ftrength, his cunning, his difpofition, His wealth is exceflive in all kinde of reches for a private man, and muft needs be much more, then any body lightly can imagne, for the intinie wayes he hath had of gaine, fo many yecres toge. Eeycef. $\mathrm{A}_{\mathrm{i}}$ ength ther. His ftrengith and power is abfolute and itreGifable, as hath beene fh: wed both in Chamber, Leyceff. cunning Court, Councell and Country. His cyaning in plotting and fortifying the fame, both by furce and fraud, by Mines and countermines, by trenches, bulwarkes, flawkers and rampiers : by friends, entmies, allies, fervants, creatures, and dependents, or any other that may ferve his turne; is very rate

## (81)

and fingular. His difpofuoon to cruelty, murder, treafon and tyranny : and by all thefe to fupream Soverniguty over other, is moft evident and cleare. And then judge you whether her Majefly thit now ralgneth (whole life and prof persy, the Lard in mercy long preferve, ) have not juft caufe so f are, in refp. \& of thefe things onely; if there were no other part culars to prove his afpir ring intent befides?
No doubt (quath the Lawyer) but thefe are great matters, in the queftion of fuch a caufe as is ${ }^{\text {a Cown }}$ And we have feen by example, that the leaft ot thefe four, which you have here named, or raher fome little branch contained in any of feate fordor them, hath bin fuffisient to found juft fufpition, Maiclly. diiltult or galoufie, in the htads of molt wifs Princes, rowalds the proceedings of more affured fubj:cts, then my Lord of Leyceffer, in reafon may be prifuned to be. For that the fafety of a ftate and Prince, ftandeth not onely in the readineflic and habiliyy of refifting open attempts, when they flall fall out ; but alfo (and that much more as Staffts write) in a certaine provident watchfudneffe, of preventing all poffibilities and likelihonds of dinger of fuppreflion, for that no Prance commualy, will put himalelfe to the curtufie of anncher man) be he neypr (o obliged) whether he fhall retaine his Crowne or no: feeing Whe caufe of a Kingdome, acknowledgeth nerther kindred, dury, fath, friendlup, nor focirty.

1 know not whether I doe expound or declare my felf well or no;but my meaning is, that wheras every Prince hath two poinrs of allurance from his Cubject ; the one, in that he is fauhfull, and lackech will toannoy his Soveraigue ; the other,

## (82)

A poine of neece Sary policy for a Pimes.

A philofophicall argument to prove Leycefters intent of fovesaignty.
for that he is weake and wauteth ability, to do the fame: the firft is alwayer of more importana then the fecond, and conlequently more to bey. ed and ot ferved in policy: for that our will may berhanged at our pleafure, but not our abilty.

Coulfiderng then upon that which hath beeme faid and ipecified before, how thie niy Lord of Leicicfer hath poffefed himfelf of all the ftrengh, powers and finewes of the Realme, hath drawie all to his own direction, and hath made his pant fo ftrong, as it feemeth not refiftable: you har great reafon to fay, thrt her Majefty may jully conceive fome doabt, for that 1 f his will were 2c. cording to his power, mooft affured it is, that ba Majefty were not in Rafety.

Say nor fo,good fir, (quoth I) for in fuch a cale truly, I would repofe little upon his will, whichn fo many wayes apparant, to be moft infatiabled ambition. Racher would I thinke that as yet tiin ability fervech not,either for time, place, force, $\alpha$ fome orher circumftance: then that any par of good will fhould want in him ; feeing that nox onely his defire of foveraignty, but alfo his intex and attempt to afpire to the fame, is fufficieant) declared (in my conceit) by the very particular of his power and plots already fer downe. Whid if you pleafe to have the patience, to heares Scholars argument, I will prove by a principleod our Philofophy.

For if it be true which Arijotle Caith, there in no agent fo fimple in the world, which worked not for fome finall end, (as the bird briiddeth na her nef but to dwell and hatch her yong ono therein: ) and not oncly this, but alfo that de fame agent, doth alwayes frame his worke 2 . cording to the proportion of his intended end (as when the Fox or Badger maketh $\mathfrak{q}$ wide etruh
or den, it is a figne that he meaneth to draw thither great flore of prey:) then mult we alfo in reafon thinke, that fo wife and politick an agent, as is my Lord of Leicgfey for himfelfe, wanteth nor his end in thefe plottings and preparasions of his; Imeane an end proportionable in greatnefle to his preparations. Which end can be no lefic not meaner then fupreame Soveraignty, feeing hus provifon and furniture doe tend that way, and are in every point fully correfpondenc to the fame.

What meanerh his fo diligent befieging of the The preparaxions Princes perfon? his taking up the wayes and paffages about her ?his infolency in Court ? his fingularity in the Councell ? his violent preparation of ftrength abroad ? his enriching of his complices? the bandrng of his faction, with the abundanee of friends every where? what doe thefe things fignifie (I fay) and fo many other, as you have well noted and mentioned before; but onely his intent and purpofe of Supremacy? What did the fame things portend in times pah in his Fa. ther, buteven that whi,h now they portend in the Sodac? Or how fhould we Ihnke, that ihe Son haih another meaning in the very fame actions, then had his Father before him, whole fteps he felloweth.
I remember I have heard ofrentimes of divers axcient and grave men in Cambridge, how that in King Edmardidayes the Duke of Northumberland this mans Father, was generally fufpeated of all men, tomean isdeed as afterward he fh:wed, efpecially when he had once joyned with the houfe of suffolk, and made himfelfe a principall of that faction by marriage. But yet for that he was potent, and protefted every where, and by all occafions his कreat love, duty, and fpeciall care, above all

- :hers, of Leycefter declare his iutended end.

How the Doke of Northumberland diflembled hiscud.

## (84)

orhets, that he bare towaras his Prince \& Coun. try; no man durf accure him openly, untill it was too late to withftand his power, ( as commonly it fallech out in fuch affaires) and the like is evidem in my Lord of Leycterss actions now(albett to ber My jefty, 1 doube not, but that be will pretend and proteft, as his Father did to her Brother) efp:cal. ly now after his open affociation with the t ction of Huntington ; which no leffe impugneth uoder this mans proteetion, the whole line of $H$ snry the feventh for right of the Crowne, then the houli of suffake did under his Father the particulut prog $y$ of King heny the eight.

Nay rasher much mure(quath the Genilemag) The boldneffe of for that I doe not read in King Edwards raigne, the utlers of Claronce.

Lswer.

Centlemar. No: they need not(quoth the Gentleman)fet. The abufe of rhe ing their party is fo ftrong and terrible, as no man statute forfilence dare accufe them : feeing alfo they well know, in the true fircecffion.
 that the procurement of that Stature, was onely to endanger or ftop the mouthes of the true Succeffors, whiles themfelvesin the meanefpace wem ahout under hand, to eftablifh their owene am. bufhment.

Well : (quoth theLawyer) for the preteace of my Lord of Huntington to the Crowne. I will not ftand with you for thot it is a mattcr fufficiently known and feen throughout the Realme. As allo

## (85)

that my Lord of Letceffer is at thisday a principall fayourer and patron of that cawic, albeit fome yeers paft, he were an earneft adverfary and enemy to the fame. But yet I have heard fome friends of his, in reafoning of thefe matters, deny ftoutly a point or two, which you have touched here, and doe feeme to beleeve the fame.

And that is, firft, that howfoever my Lord of Two exculesalLeicefter do meane to helpe his friend, when time leadged by Ler fhall erve, yet pretendeth he nothing to the ceftersitrends. Crowne himfelfe. The fecond is that whatfoever may be meant for the title, or compaffing the Crowne after her $\mathrm{M}_{1}$ jefties death, yet nothing is intended duriag her raigae. And of both thele points they alledge realons.

As for the firft, that my Lord of Leycefier is very well knowne to have no title to the Crowse humelfe, euther by difcent in blood, alliance or otherwyes. For the fecond, that his Lord hath no caufe to be a $M_{3}$ lecontent in the prefent government, nor hope for more preferment, if my Lord of Huntington were King to morrew next, then hereeerveth now at her Majefties hands; having all the Realme (as hath bin fhewed) at his owne difpofition.

For the firtt (quoth the Gentleman) whether he meane the Crowne for himfelf;, or for his friend, it impurteth not mucb; feeing both Whether Leywayes it is evident, that he meaneih to have all sefter meane the at his owne difpofition. And al beit now for the avoydigg of enry, he give it out, as a crafty
for Huntingron or for bimfelfe.

> Erown fincerely Fow, that he meaneth not but to run with other men, and to huat w th Hentington and other hounds in the fame chafe; yee is it not unlike, but that he will play the Beare, when he cometh to dividing of the pray, and will fratch the bet past to himfelfe. Xea, and thefe felf fame pe:-

## Gexilomes.

## 

$\qquad$


## (86)

fons of his traine and taction, whom you call his friend, though in publique, to excafe his doings, and to cover the whole plot, they will and mutt deny the matters to be fo meant: yet otherw fe they both thuike, hope and know the concrary, and will not flick in lecret to 「pe $\& 1 t$, and among themfelves, it is their talke of confolation.

The words of his fpeciall Councelloar the

The words of the Lord North, to * Mater Pooly.

Pooly rold this to Sir Robert Iermine.

Lord 2eertb, are known, which he uttered to hus trufly pooly, upon the recert of a let:et from Court, of her Majefties difpleafure tow ards him, for his being a witneffe at Leycefters fecond mar. riage with Dame Letrice (although I know he was not i nunorant of the firft) at Wanftead : of which difpleafure, this Lord making far leffiac compt then, in reafon he fhould, of the juft of. fence of his foveraigne, faid : that for his own part he was refolved to finke or (wimme with my Lord of Lercefier, who (faid he) if once the Cards may come to fhuffing (I will ufe but his very own words ) I make no doubt but he alone fhutl beare away the Bucklers,
The words of sir The words alfo of Sir Tbowas Layton, to Sir Ha Thomas Layton brother in law to my Lord. VI zeevile, walking upon the Iarrefle at Windion are known, who told him, after long difcourfe of their happy conceived Kingdome, that hee doubted not, but to fee him one day, hold the fame office in WindCor, of my Lord of Lyyefier, which now my Lord did hold of the Queene. Meaning thereby the goo dly office of Conitable Ship, with all Royalcies and and honours,belong. ing to the fame, which now the faid Sir Hem exercifeth onely as Deputy to the Earle. Whith was plainely to fignifie, that, he doubred not bur to fee my Lord of Leycefter one day King, or els his other hope could never poffibly take effica ot come to pafle.

## (87)

To she fame point tended the words of Mi- The words of freflic Anne Wiff, Dame Lettice fifter, unto the Miftris Anne Lidy Anse Askew, in the great Chamber, upon a day when her brother Robert Knowples had dan- tefle.
red difgratioufly and fcornfully before the Queen in prefence of the French. Which thing for that her Majefly tooke to proceed of will in him, as for diflike of the frangers in prefence, and for the quarrell of his fifter Efex; it pleafed her Majelly to check him for the fame, with addition of a repreachfull word or two (full well deferved) as though done for defpite of the forced ablence from that place of honour, of the good old Genthewoman (I mitigate the words) his fifter. Which words, the other young twig receiving in deepe dudgen, brake forth in great choler to her forenamed companion, and faid, That the nothing doubted, but that one day fhee fhould fee ber fitter, upon whom the Queene railed now fo much (for fo it pleafed her to tearme her Majefies fharpe fpeech) to sit in her place and throne, being much worthier of the fame, for her qualties and rare vertucs, then was the other. Which undutifull fpeech, albeit it were were-heard and condemned of divers that fate about them, yet none durft ever report the fame to her Majefly, as I h we heard fundry Courtiers affirme, iu reipect of the revenge which the reporters fhould abide at my Lord of Leycefters hands, whenfoever the matter fhould come to light.

And this is now concerning the opinion and fecret lpeeches of my Lords owne friends, who cannot but utter their conceit and judgement in time and place convenient, whatfocver they are willed to give out publikely to the contrary, for deceiving of fuch as will belecve faire painted words,

Threearguments words, againft evident and manifft demonftation of reafon.
of Leyeefiers meaning for himfelfe before Huntiogron.

The fritt argument, the Nature of ambition.

I fay reafon, for that if none of thele fignes and tokens were, nome of thefe prepartions nnr any of thefe fpeeches and detections, by his friends that know his beart; yet in force of plain reafon,l could alleadge unto you three arguments onely which to any man of intelligençe, would cafily perfwade and give fatisfaction, that my Lord of Leycefermeaneth belt and firt for himfelfe in the fuit. Which three arguments, for that you fieme to be attent; I will aot ftick to run over in all brevity.

And the firft, is the very nature and quality of ambition it (elf, which is fuch, (as you know) that it never fayeth, but paffeth from degree to degres and the more it obtaineth, the more it eovereth and the more efteemeth it felfe, both worthy and able to obtaine. And in our matter that now wi handle; even as in wooing, he that fueth to a $L_{\text {po }}$ dy for another, and obraineth her good will, entereth eafily into conceit of his owne worthucfie thereby, and fo commonly into hope offeeedng himfelfe, whle he fpeaketh for his friend 60 much more in Kingdomes : he that feeth himfelf of power toput the Crowne of another mans head, will quickly ftep to the next degree, whind is, to fet it of his owne, freing that alwayes the charity of fuch good men, is wont to be fo ordere ly, as (according to the precepc) it beg inneth wis it felfe firf.
Adde to this, that ambition is ;ealous, furpition and fearfull of it felfe, elpecially when it is joynd with a confcience loden with the guile of many erimes, wherenf he would be loth to be called to account, or be fubject to any min that might by au:hority take review of his life $\$$ actions, whenic

## (81)

thould pleafe him. In which kinde, feeing my Lord af Leyceter hath fo much to encreafc his feare, as beisn fore hath beene fhewed by his wicked dealings: it is not like, that ever hee will put himfelfe to another mans courtefie, for paffing his audiet in particular reckunings, which he can no way anfwer or fatisfie: but rather will ftand upon the groffic Sum, and gencrall Quietus efl, by making himfelfe chiefe Auditour, and Mafter of all accompts for his owne part in this life, howfoever he do in the next: whereof fuch humours have little regard. And this is for the nature of ambition in it felfe.
The fecond argument may bee taken from my The fecone Lords particular difpofition : which is fuch, as may argument. give much light alfo to the matter in queftion: bè- Legceferss ing a difpofition fo well liking and inclined to a partucular Kingdome, as it hath beene tampering about the fame, fron the firft day that hee came in favour. Leyceffers Firft, by feeking openly to marry wirh the Queenes Majeftie her felfe, and fo to draw the Crowne upon "his owne head, and to his pofterity. Secondly, when that attempt tooke not place, then hee gave it out; as hath beene fhewed before, how that he was privily contracted to her Majefty, (wherein as I told you his dealing before for fatisfaction of a ftranger, To let him with thame and dithonour remember now I meane the alfo, the fpectacle hee fecretly made for the per- noble eld rifivading of a fubject, and Counfellour of great ho-Earie of nour in the fame caufe) to the end that if her High-Pembrook . an nefle fhould by any way have mifcarried, then he might have entituled any one of his owne brood, (whereoffic hath fore in miany places as is knowne) to the lawfull fueceffion of the Crowne, under colour of that privy and fecret marriage, pretending the fame to bee by her Majeftie? wherein hee will want no witneffes to depofe what hee willd

## (82)

The unduri: Thirdly, when he faw alfo that this devife was fuub full devife of Naturall iffue, in the Stature of fuecefion. ject to danger, for that his privy contract migh be denied more eafily, then he able juftly to prone the fame, after her Majefties deceale : he had a nen fetch to ftrengthen the matter, and that was caufe thefe words of (2xatmrall if $u e$ ) to be put it to the Statute of fucceffion for the Crowne, againd all order and cuftome of our Realme, and agait the knowne common file of Law, accuftomed to bee ufed in Statures of fuch matter : wherder hee might be able after the death of her Majefty to make ligitimate to the Crowne any one baftaid of his owne, by any of fo many hacknies as he kee pert, affliming it to bee the Naturall iffue of bee Majefty by himielte. For no other reafon can ber imagined why the ancient ufuall words of Lat fult iffue fhould fo cunningly bee changed irs 2Natnyall iffue; thereby not onely to indanger ou whole Realme with new quarrels of fucceffion, but alfo to touch (as farre as in him lyeth) the Royall honour of his Soveraigne, who hath beene to him but too bountifull a Princeffe.
Fourthly, when after a time thefe fetches and dr vices began to be difcovered, he changed ftraigy his courfe, and rurned to the Papifts and Scotio fattion, pretending the marriage of the Quèencin prifon, But yet atter this againe, finding therein not fuch fuccefle as contented him throughly, ani having in the meane fpace a new occafion offerti of baire; he betooke himfelfe fiftly to the party of Huntivgton: having therein (no doubt) as god meaning to himfelfe; as his Father had by joyning with suffolke. Marry yet of late, he hath caft anen about, once againe, for himfelfe in fecret, by terThe marriage ting the marriage of young Arbella with his Son, of arbefla. intitled the Lord Denbigh.

## (83)

So that by this we fee the difpofition of this mati bent wholly to a feepter. And albeit in right title, and difcent of bloud (as you fay) hee can juftly claime neither Kingdome nor Cortage (confidering ether the bafenefic or difloyalty of his Anceftours: ) it in refpect of his prefent ftate and power, and of his naturall pride; ambition, and crafty conreyance, received from his Father, hee hath learned how to put himfelfe firft in pofleffion of chiefe rule, under orher pretences, and after to devife upon the title at his leafure.
But novi to come to the third argument: I fay The tbird more, and above all this, that the nature and argumens. fate of the matter it felfe, permitteth not, that my The nature Lord of Leycefler fhould meane fincerely the of the caure Crowne for Huntington; efpecially feeing there it-selfe. hath paffed betweene them fo many yeares of diflike and ennity: which albeit, for the time and prefent commodity, bee covered and preffed downe : yet by reafon and experience we know, that afterward when they fhall deale together againe in matters of importance, and when jealoufie fhall bee joyned to other circumftances of their actions, it is impoffible that the former miflike fhould not breake out in farre higher degree; then ever before.
As wee faw in the examples of the reconciliation, The natare of made betwixt this mans Father, and Edward, Duke old reconci=of Somerfet, bearing rule under King Edzvard the led camairy. fixt: and betweene Ricbard of $\boldsymbol{\gamma}$ orke, and Edmund Duke offsomerfet, bearing rule in the time of King II ar the fixt. Both which Lukes of Somer cet, atter reconciliation with their old, crafty, and ambisious enemies, were brought by the fame to theit deftrution foorie after. Whereof I doubt not, bue my Lord of Lefcefter will rake good heed, in joy-

G2 ning

## (84)

ning by reconciliacion with Huntington, afier fo long a breach : and will not be fo improvident, as to make him his foveraigne, who now is but his dependent. He remembreth too well the fuccefic of the Lord Staitly, who helped King. Henry the fesventh to the Crowne : of the Duke of suchingham, who did the fame for Richard the third: of the Earle of warnic $k e$, who fet up King Edward the fourth: and of the three Percies, who advanced to the Scep. ter King Henty the fourch. All which Noblemen upon occafions that after fell out, were rewarded with death by the felfe fame Princes, whom they had preferred.
The reafon of Machavell.

And that not withour reafon, as Seignior Machoc vell; my Lords Counfellour affirmeth. For tha fuch Princes, afterward can never give fufficient fatisfaction to fuch friends, for fo great a benefit received. And conlequently, leaft upon difcontentment, they may chance to doe as much for others againft them, as they have done for them againt others: the fureft way is, to recompence them with fuch a reward, as they fhall never after be able to complaine of.
Wherefore I can never thinke that my Lord d Leycefer will pur himfelfe in danger of the like fuce cefle at Huntiangtons hands: but rather will follom The meaning the p.or of his owne Farher, with the Duke of Supf: of the Duke of Northumberland with Suffolke. fulk, whom no doubr, but hee meant onely to ule for a pretext and helpe, whereby to place himfelfe in fupreame dignity, and a fterward whatfoe ver had befallen of the flate, the orhers head could never have come to ocher end, then it enjoyed. For if Queene Mary had not cut it off, King John of Nor thumberland would have done the lame in time, and fo all men doe well know, that weqe privy to any of his cunning dealings.

## $(85)^{7}$

And what Hualingtons fecret opinion of Leycefier is, (notwithftanding this outward fhew of dependance) it was my chance to learne, from the mouth South-boufe. of a feeciall man of that hafty King, who was his Ledger or Agent in London; and at a time falling in talke of his Mafters title, declared that he had heard him divers times in fecret, complaine to his Lady, (Legcefiers fifter) as grearly fearing that in the end, he would offer him wrong, and pretend fome critle for himelfe.
Well (quoth the Lawyer) it feemeth by this laft Lawyer. point, that thefe two Lords are cunning practitioners in the art of diffimulation: but for the former whercof you fpeake, in truch, I have heard men of good difourfe affirme, that the Duke of Northomberland had Itrange devifes in his head, for deceiving of Suffolke, (who was norhing fo fine as himThe meaning felfe) and for bringing the Crowne to his owne md towards Family. And among orther devifes it is thought, suffolke. that hee had moft certaine intention to marry the Lady Mary himfelfe, after once hee had brought her into his owne hands) and to have befowed her Majeftic that now is, upon fome one of his children (if it fhould have beene thought beft to give her life, (and fo confequently to have flaken off suffolke and his pedegree, with condigne punifhment, for his bold behaviour in that behake.

Verily (quoth I) this had beene an excellent Scbalar.
Stratageme, if it had taken place. Bur I pray you (Sir) how could himfelfe have taken the Lady Mary to wife, feeing hee was at that time married to another ?

O (quoth the Gencleman) you queftion like a Genileman. Schollar. As though my Lord of Leyceffer had not a wife alive, when hee firft began to pretend mar-

$$
\mathrm{G}_{3} \text { riage }
$$

## (86)

riage to the Queenes Majefty. Do not you remenber the ftory ot King Ricuard the third, who at luch time as he thought beft for the eftablifhing of his

The pratile of King Tich. afd for dif. patching his Wife. title; to marry his owne Neece, that afterward was married to King Henry the feventh, how he caufed fecretly to be given abroad that his owne wife was dead, whom all the World knew to bee then alive and in good health, but yet foone a ferward fhe wes feene dead indeed Theie great perfonages in matters of fuch weight, as is a Kingdome, have prive ledges to difpole of Womens bodies, marriages, lives and deaths, as thall be thought for the time moft convenienr.

A new Triumsirat between new Triumuirat fo Iately concluded about Arbells? Legcefler, Tal- (for fo I muft call the fame, though one of the Counteffe of Sbrerestury. of the marriage betweene young Denbigh and the little Daughter of Lenex, whereby the Father-inlaw, the Grand-mother, and the tincle of the new defigned Queene, have conceived to themfelves a fingular triumphant raigne. But what doe gou think may enfue hereof , is there nothing of the old plot of Duke John of Northumbarland in this?

Marry Sir, (quoth the Lawyer) if this be fo, 1 dare aflure you there is fequell enough pretendel hereby. And firft, no doubt but there goeth a detp \$rift, by the wife and fonne, againft old Abrabam (the Husband and Father) with the well-lined large pouch. And fecondly, a farre deeper, by trufty Robert againft his beft Miftrefle: : but dee peft of all by the whole Crew, againft the defigne-
Juntingesan. ments of the hafty Earle; who thirftech a King- dome with great intemperance, and feemeth(if there were plaine dealing) to hope by thefe good people to quench fortly his drought.

## (87)

Bur either part, in truth, leekerh to deceive other: and therefore it is hard to fay where the game in fine will reft.
Well, howfoever that be (quoth the Gentleman) Gentlemain. 1 am of opinion, that my Lord of Leycefter will ufe both this practife and many more, for bringing the Scepter finally to his owne head : and that he will The fleights not onely imploy Hustington to defeate Scotland, of Leyceffer and Atbella to defeate Huntington: but alfo would for bringing ufe the marriage of the Queene imprifoned, to de-felfe. "feat them both, if fhe were in his hand: and any one of all three to difpoffeffe her Majefty that now is: as allo the authority of all foure to bring it to himfelfe : with many other fetches, flings and frifcoes befides, which fimple men as yet doe not conceive.

And howfoever thefe two conjoyned Earles, doe scambling feeme for the time to draw together, and to play between Ley: booty: yet am I ofopinion, that the one will be- cefier \& $H_{\text {Kn- }}$ guile the other at the upfhot. And Haftings, for timgton at the guile I ought I fee, when hee commerh to the Icambling, is like to have no better luck by the Beare, then his Anceftour had once by the Boare. Who ufing his helpe firft in murdering the Sonne and Heire of King Henty the fixt, and after in deftroying the faithtull Friends and Kinfmen of King Edward Glosefer, An. the lift, for his eafier way to ufurpation: made an n. Edw. 5 . end of him alfo in the Tower, at the the very fame day and houre, that the other were by his coun-fell deftroyed in Pontfret Caftle. So that where the Goale and price of the game is a Kingdome, there is neither faith, neither good fellowfhip, nor faire play among the Gamefters. And this fhall be enough for the firft point: (viz.) what good my Lord of Leyceffer meaneth to himfelfe in refpect of Huntingtea.

Touching the fecond, whether the attempt be
G 4 purpo-

## (88)

4. That the purpofed in her Majefties dayes or no, the matteris conipirators much leffe doubtfull, to him that knoweth or can meane in her Majefties da ers.

Foure conliderations . imagine what a torment the delay of a Kingdane is, to fuch a one as fuffereth hunger thereof, and feareth that every houre may breed fome alterarion, to the prejudice of his conceived hope. Wer fee oftentimes that the childe is impatient in this matter, to expect the naturall end of his parent life. Whom, notwithftanding, by nature he is coforced to love : and who alfo by nature, is like long to leave this World before him: and atter whole deceafe, hee is aflured to obtaine his defire: bur moft eertaine of dangerous event, if he artempt in get it, while yet his parent liveth. Which foure confiderations ate (no doubr) of great force to containe a child in duty, and bridle his defire: albeir fometimes not fufficient to withftand the greedy appetite of raigning.
But what fhall wee thinke, where none of thefle foure confiderations do reftraine:where the prefent Poffeflor is no parent? where the is like by nature, to out-live the expeitor? whofe death muft needs bring infinite difficulties to the enterprife? and in whofe life-time the matter is moft eafie to be atchicved, under colour and authority of the prefent Pr . feflor ? fhall we thinke that in (uch a cafe the ambir tious man will over-rule his owne paftion, and lects his commodity.
As for that whish is alleadged before, for my Lord $h$ thing wor- in the reafon of his Defenders:that his prefent ftate thy to be no- is fo profperous, as hee cannot expect better in tie red in ambiti-. next change whatfoever fhould be: is of fraall mo-
ous men. ment, in the conceipt of an ambitious head, whole eye and heart is alwayes upon that, which he hopeth for, and enjoyeth not: and not upon than which already hee poffefferh, be it never fo good.

Efpecially

## (89)

Efpecially in matters of honour and autherity, it is an infallible rule, that one degree defired and not obtained, affliteth more then five degrees already poffifled, can give confolation : the ftory of Duke Hamm confirmeth this evidently, who being the greatef fubjeet in the World under King Aguerus, Hifor. \%, after he had reckoned up all his pompe, riches, gloty, and felicity to his friends, yet hee faid, that all thiswas nothing unto him, untill he could obtaine the revenge which hee defired, upon Mardocheus his enemy: and hereby it commeth ordinarily to pafle, that among higheft in authority are found the greateft ftore of Male-contents, that moft doe andauger their Prince and Countrey.
When the Percies took part with Henry of Boling- The Percies. brooke, againft King Richard the fecond their lawfull Soveraigne : it was not for lack of preferment, for they were exceedingly advanced by the faid King, and poflefled the three Earledomes of Xerstumberland, wor effer, and Staffind together, befides many other offices and dignities of honour.
In like fort, when the two Neviles tooke upon them to joyne with Ricbard of Yorke, to put downe their molt benigne Prince, King Heinry the fixt: and

The two

## Neviles.

 after again in thic other fide, to put downe King $E_{d}$ ward the fourth; it was not upon want of advancement: they being Earles both of Salusbury and warwich, and Lords of many notable places befides. But it was upon a vaine imagination of furure fortune, whereby fuch men are commonly led: and yet had not they any fmell in their noftrils of getting the hingdane for themfelves, as this man hach to prick him forward.If you fay that thefe men hated their Soveraigne, Leyeffurs haand that thereby they were led to procure his dc- tred to her ftruetion:the fame I may anfwer of my Lord living, Majeffy. though

## (90)

though of all men he hath leaft caufe fo to do. Bu yet fuch is the nature of wicked ingratitude, that where it oweth moft, and difdainecth to be bound, there upon every litele difcontentment, it turned double ohligatoon into triple harred.
This he thewed evidently in the time of his litule difgrace, wharein hee noc onely did diminih, vili. pend, and debafe among his friends, the ineftims. ble benefits hee hath received from her Majofie, but allo ufed to exprobrate his owne good fervica and merits, and to touch her highnefle with in. grate confideration and recompence of the fame; which behaviour, together with his haffy prepario tion to rebellion, and alluult of her Majefties Roy. all perfon and dignity, upon fo fimall a caufe gir ven, did well fhew what minde inwardly he been reth' to his Soveraigne, and what her Maje efty muy expect, if by offending hiin, thee fhould ance fill within the compaffe of his furious pawes: feeing fuch a fmoke of didaine could not proceed, but from a fierie fornace of hatred within.

And furely it is a wonder full matter to confider what a litele check, or rather the bare innaginatoon of a fnall overthwart, may worke in a proud and difdainfull ftomacke. The remembrance of $h i$
The caufes of marriage mified, that hee fo much pretended and defired with her Majeftie, doth fticke deeply in hit breaft, and ftirrecth him daily to revenge. As alfo doth the difdaine of certaine checks and difgraces received at fomerimes, efpecially that of his lat marriage : which irkech him fo much the more, by how much greater feare and danger it krought bim into at that time, and did put his Widow in fuch open phrenfic, as fhee raged many monehs after againit her Majeftie, and is not cold yet, but remaineth as it were a fworne enemy for that

## (9I)

ok injury, and ftandeth like a fiend or fury at the Ide. elbow of her Amadis, to ftirre him forward when enoccafion fhall ferve. And what eftect fuch female The force of rufuggeftions may worke, when they finde an hu-female fug: mour proud and pliable to their purpofe, you may geftions. hisiremember by the example of the Duchefle of SOilh. mory $\mathrm{l}_{\mathrm{t}}$, who inforced her Husband to cut off the nethead of his onely deare Brother, to his owne eviMusdent defruction, for her contentation.

Wherefore, to conclude this matter withour An evidene wiffurther difpure or reafon: faying, there is fo much te indifovered in the dafe as there is: fo great defire of protaigne, fo great impatience of delay, fo great hope ies land hability of fuccefle, if ir be attempred under of her Mauni che good fortune and prefent authority of the com- jefty. u:yetirours: feeing the plors be fo well laid, the etf preparation fo forward, the favourers fo furnithed, oncethe time fo propitious, and fo many other caufes iconviting together: feeing that by differing, all ed may be hazarded, and by haftening, little can be indangered; the ftate and condition of things well coureyed: finding alfo the bands of duty fo broken gina already in the confpiratours, the caufes of miflike oudiand hatred fo manifeft, and the folicitours to execoicution, fo potent and diligent, as women, madedilice, and ambition, are wont to bee: it is more lyathen probable, that they will not leefe their prefent As commodity, efpecially feeing they have learned by ifgrtheir Archi-tipe or Proto-plot which they follow, (I he meane the confpiracy of Nortbumberland and Suf- Au errour of : folle in King Edroards dayes) that herein there truywas fomb errour committed at that time, which iddo overthrew the whole; and that was, the deferring now of fome things uncill after the Kings death, which Id flould have beene put in execution before.

For if in the time of their ploting, when as yet

## (92)

their defignements were not publifzed to the world they had under the countenance of the King (a) well they might have done) gotten into their hands the two Sifers, and difparched fome other fewal: faires, before they had caufed the young Princeto die: no dobut, but in mans reafon the wholedo. fignement had taken place : and confequently it is to be prefuppofed, that thefe men (being no foole in their owne affaires) will take heed of falling into the like errour by delay: but rather will make all fure, by.ftriking while the iron is hot, as our proverbe warneth them.
Lamyer.
It cannot bee denied in reafon (quoth the $\mathrm{L}_{2 \times}$. yer) but that they have many helpes of doing what they lift now, under the prefent a favour, countenance, and authority of her Majefty, which they fhould not have after her Highnefle deceafe : when each man fhall remaine more at liberty for his fir preame obedience, by reafon of the ftatute provided for the uncertainty of the next fucceffor: and therefore I for my part, would rather counfell them to make much of her Majefties life; for after that, they little know what may enfue, or befall theirde fignements.
Gentlemax. They will make the moft thereof (quoth the Ger tleman) for their owne advantage, but after thu, what is like to follow, the examples of $\boldsymbol{E} d$ woard and Riclbard the fecond, as allo of Heniry and Edipardthe fixt, doe fufficiently fore-warne us: whofe livea were prolonged, untill their deaths were thouglr more profitable to the confpiratours, and not lon-

Her Majefties life and deach, to ferve the conEpiratours surne, ger. And for the ftatute you fpeak of, prosured by themfelves, for eftablifhing the incertainty of the next true fucceffour, (whereas all our former fttutes were wont to be made for the declaration and certainty of the fame) it is with Provifo, (as you

## (93)

know) that it thall not endure longer then the life of her Majefty, that now raigneth : that is, indeed, tho longer then untill themelves be ready to place nother, For then, no doube, but wee fhall fee a A Proclamaaire Proclamation, that my Lord of Auntington is tion with he onely next heire: with a bundle of halters to halters. iang all fuch, as fhall dare onee open their mouth thior deniall of the fame.

Atthefe words the old Lawyer ftepped back, as Lawyer. iomewhat aftonied, and began to make Crofles in Papifticall he ayre alter their fafhion, whereat we laughed; bleffing. ind then he faid, truly my Mafters I had thought hat no man had conceived fo evill imagination of his fature as my felfe: but now I perceive that I tone am not malitious. For my owne part, I muft The ftature : onfeffe unto you, that as often as I reade over this thatute, or thinke of the farge (as by divers occafiling the heire apparant: prons many times I doe) I feele my felfe much greeid ved and alflicted in minde, upon feares which I teonceive what may be the end of this flatute to our feCountrey, and what privy meaning the chiefe prothecurers thereof might have for their owne drifts, againft the Realme and life of her Majeftic that herHow ralgneth.

And fo much more it maketh mee to doubt, for Ribbard gowrithat in all our records of law, you fhall not find (to ing sowards wmy remembrance) any one example of fuch a devife for concealing of the true inheritour: but rather in all ages, ftates, and times, (efpecially from Richard the firf downeward) you fhall finde ftatutes, ordinances, and provifions, for declaration and manifeffation of the fame, as you have well obferved and touched before. And therefore, this ftrange and new devife muft needs have fome frange and unaccu- next batisefomed meaning : and God of his mercy grant, that is have nor fome ftrange and unexpected cyent.

## (94)

The danger In fight of all men, this is already evident, that ne of our Coun- ver Countrey in the world was brought into more zrey by concealing the next keire. apparent danger of utter ruine, then ours is at this day, by pretence of this Statute. For whereasthere is no Gentleman fo meane in the Realme, that cannot give a gueffe more or Iefle, who thall bee bis next heire, and his Tenants foone conjecture, what manner of perfon fhall be cheir next Lord: in thetitle of our noble Crown, whereof all the reft dependeth ; neither is her Majefty permitted to know a fay, who thall be her next fucceffor, nor her fubjets allowed to underftand or imagine, who in rightir may be their future Soveraigne: An intollerable injury in a matter of fo fingular importance. For (alas) what fhould become of this our native Countrey, if God fhould take from us her mottex.

Great inconveniences. cellent Majefty (as once he will) and fo leave ul deftitute upon the fudden, what fhould become of our lives, of our ftates, and of our whole Realmic or governement? can any man promife himfelfe one day longer, of reft, peace, pofleffion, life or $i-$ berty within the land, then God fhall lend ushet Majefty to raigne over us? Which albeit, wee des and are bound to wifh that it may bee long: ja reafon telleth us, that by courfe of nature, it cannot bee of any great continuance, and by a thow. fand aceidents it may be much fhorter. And fhall then our moft noble Common-wealth and King. dome, which is of perpetuity, and muft continuc to our felves and our pofterity, hang onely upon the life of her Highnefle alone, well ftrucken in yeares, and of no great good health, or robuttious and ftrong complexion?
Sir ehrijopher I was within hearing fome fix or feaven yeares Hastons Ora* agoe, when Sir Cbriftopber Hatton, in a very grear tion,

## (95)

wene was pux in print) ar the pardoning and delivery of him from the gallowes, that by errour (as was thought) had dilcharged his pecce upon her Majeftie: Barge, and hurt certaine perfons in her Higharefe prefence. And in that Oration he declared and deferibed very effectually, what ineftimable dammage had enfued to the Realme, if her Majefty by that or any other means fhould have beene taken from us. He fet forth moft lively before the cyes of all men, whar divifion, what diflenfion, what bloudfted had enfued, \& what fatall dangers were mof certaine to fall upon us, whenfoever that dolefull day fhould happen: wherein no man fhould be fure of his life, of his goods, of his wife, of his children: no man certain whether to flie, whom to follow, or where to feeke repofe or protection. And as all dhe hearers there prefent did eafily grant that he therein faid rruth, and farre lefle then might have beene faid in that behalfe, things ftanding as they doe: (o many one (I trow) hath heard thele words procced from a Councellour, that had good caufe ro know the flate of his own Countrey, entred into this cogitation, what puniffment they might deferve then, at the whole State and Common-Intollerabic wealths hands, who firft by letting her Majefty from Treafons. marriage, and then by procuring this statute of diffenbling the next inheritour, had brought their Realme into fo evident and inevirable dangers: for every one well confidered and weighed with himEelfe, that the thing which yet only letted thefe dangers and miferies fet downe by Sir Chriftop ber, muft: necefliarly one day faile us.all, that is, the life of her Majefty now prefent: and then (fay we) how fallect it out, that fo generall a calamity as muft needs overtake us ere it be long (and may, for any thing we know tomorrow next) is not provided tor, afwell as fore-fesens,

## (96)

Is there no remedy, but that wee muft willingly and wittingly runne into our owne ruine? and for the favour or feare of fome few alpirours, betray our Countrey, and the bloud of fo many thoufand innocents as live within the land?
zhe moiferies so follow ep. on her Majeflics death.

For tell mee (good Sirs) I pray you, if her $M_{26}$ jeftie should die to morrow next (whofe life God long preferve and blefle,) but if the fhould betaken from us, (as by condieion of nature and humane frailty fhe may) what would you doe ? which way would you looke? or what head or part knem any good fubject in the Realme to follow? I peale not of the confpiratours, for I know they will bet ready and refolved whom to follow: but I feake of the plaine, fimple, and well-meaning fubject, who following now the utter letter of this fraudur lent ftatute, (fraudulent I meane in the fecret conceipt of the cunning afpirours !) thal! beetzken at that day upon the fudden, and being putin 2 maze by the unexpected contention about the Crowne, fhall be brought into a thoufand dangets, both of body and goods, which now are nor thought upon by them who are moft in danger of the fame. And this is for the Common-wealth and Comtrcy.

The danger zo her Majeby by this azques

But unto her Majefty, for whofe good and fafer the ftatute is onely pretended to be made, no doule but that it bringeth farre greater dangers then ang devife that they have ufed befides. For hereby un. der colour of reftraining the claimes and tites of true fucceffours, (whole endeavours notwith ding, are commonly more calme and moderate then of ufurpers,) they make unto themfelves, a meane to forfter and fee forward their owne confpiraty without controlement : feeing no man of mighe ray oppre himfelfe againft them, but with fufpiti-

## (97)

on, thax he meaneth to claime for himelfe. And fo they being armed on the one fint, with their authority and torce of prefent fortune, and defended oni the other fide, by the prerence of the ftatute: they may fecurely worke and plot at their pleafure, as 2 you have well proved before that they doe. And whenoever their grounds and foundations fhall be ready, it cannot be denied, but that her Majefties life lyeth much at their difcretion, to rake it, or ufe is, to their beft commodity: (and there is no doubr atbut they will,) as fuch men are wont to doe in fuch affaires. Marry one ching fandeth not in their powers fo ablolutely, and that is, to prolong her BMajefties dayes, or tavour towards chemfelves, at their pleafures: whereot it is not unlike but they trill have dueconfideration, leaft perhaps upon any, Fudden accident, they might be found unready.

They have good tare thereof I can allure you, Gentlemano (quoth the Genteman) and meane noc to bee prevented by any accident, or orher milhap whatliever: they will bee ready for all events : and ini for chat caule, they haften fo much their prepa- The hafttirations at this day, more then ever before: by ning of the Cfending out their fpies and follicitours every-Coripirywhere, to prove and confirme their friends, by toursdelivering their common warch-word : by complaining on all hands of our Proreftants Bifhops and Clergy, and of all the prefent ftate of our irreformed Religion, (as they call it:) by amplifying onely the danger of Papits and Scotifh faction: by giving out openly that now her Majefty is paft tope of Child-birth; and confequently, leeing God, hath given no better fucceffe that way in two Women one after the other: it were not convenient(fay they) that another of that fexe fhould enfue, with high conmendation of the Law Salich irr France,

## (98)

whereby women are forbidden to fucceed. Whide Speech, though in fhew it be delivered againft the Queen of Scots, and other of King Henty the ferenhi his line, that difcend of Sifters : yet all men fee hax it toucherh as well the difabling of her Majefty, thex is prefent, as others to come : and fo tendeth diree. ly to Maturation of the principall purpofe, which I have declared before.
scbollar.
Here faid I, for the reft which you fpeake of, be fides the Watch-word, it is common and every where treated in talke among them: but yet for the The Warch- Watch-word it felfe (for that you name it) Ithinks word of the Confitissours. (Sir) many know it not, if I were the firft that widd you the fory, as perchance I was. For in cruthl came to it by a rare hap (as then I told you) dis thing being uttered and expounded by a Baronod their owne faction, to anocher Noble man of de fame degree and religion, though not of the fame opinion in thefe affaires. And for that I am reque fted not to utter the fecond, who told it me in fecere, I muft alfo fpare the name of the firt, which wherer wife I would not ; nor the time and place wherele uttered the fame.
Lawjer. To this (faid the Lawyer) you doe well in tim! but yet I befeech you, let me know this Watch-wil (if there bee any fuch) for mine inftruction and helpe when need fhall require. For I affure you that this Gentlemans former fpeech of halters hah So terrified mee, as if any fhould come and aske, $\alpha$ fecle my inclination in thefe matters, I would anfwer them fully to their good"contentment, ifI knew the Watch-word whereby to know them. Fer of all things, I love not to bee hanged for quarrelod Kingdomes.
Schollar. This Warch-word is, (faid I) wbetber yow be fow Are youfreled, bed or ne? and if you anfiwer yca, and feeme to une derftand

## (99)

derfand the meaning thereof:then are you knowne to be of their faction, and fo to bee accompted and deale withall for things to come. But if you ftagger or doubr in anfwering, as if you knew not perfectly the miftery, (as the Nobleman my good Lord did, imagining that it had beene meant of his religion, which was very well knowne to be good, and ferled in the Go(pell) then are you dilcried chereby, either nor to be of their fide, or elfe to be but a Punic A great minot well inftructed; and confequently, he that mo-ftery. vech you the queftion, will prefently break off that fpeech, and turne to fome other talke, untill afterward occalion be given to perfwade you, or elfe inftrut you better in that afaire.

Marry the Noble man, whereof I fpake before; perceiving by the demanding, that there was fome miftery in covert, under the queftion: tooke hold of the words, and would not fuffer the propounder to flip away (as he endeavoured) but with much istreary brought him at length to expound the full meaning and purpofe of the riddle. And this was the firt occalion (as I thinke) whereby this fecret came abroad. Albeir atterwards at the publique Communions, which were made throughout fo mamany Shires, the matter became more common: efpecially among the ftrangers that inhabite (as yna know) in great numbers with us at this days. All which (as they fay) are made molt affured to this faction, and ready to affift the fame with great forees at all occafions.
Good Iord (quoth the Lawyer) how many mifte- Lawyer, ries andfecrets be there abroad in the world, whereof we fimple men know norhing, and fufpect leffe。 This Watch-word fhould I never have imagined I Aglemblies and for the great \& ofren affiemblies, under pretence at Commuo at Coumunions, though of themfelyes, and of their nionso

H 2

## (100)

owne nature, they were unaccuftomed, and confo quently fubjeet to furpition, yet I did never cone

Strangers within the Land. ceive fo farre forth as now I doe: as neither of the lodging and entertaining of fo many ftrangersin the Realme, whereof our Artizans doe complaing every-where. But now I fee the reafon thereof, which (no doubt) is founded upon great policy for the purpofe. And by this aifo I fee thate the houfeof Huntiagton prefleth tarre forward for the game, and thouldrech neare the goale to lay hands upon the fame, Which to tell you plainly, liketh me bur a little: boch in refpect of the good will I beare is the whole Line of King Henry, which hereby is lite to be difpoffeffed ; as alio for the mifery which I doe fore-fee, muft necefliarily enfue upon our Countr, The perill of if once the challenge of Huntington take place in our Countrey our Realme.: Which challenge being derived from if Hunstrxg tons
claime take place. the title of clavence onely in the Houfe of Yarke,before the union of the two great Houfes: raifeth up againe the old contention betweene the Families of Yorke and Lancafter, wherein fo much Englif( bloud was. fpilt in times paft, and much more like to bee powred out now, if the fame contention fhould be fet on foot againc. Seeing that to the controvefifa of Titles, would bee added alfo the controverfie of Religion, which of all other differences is mot dangerous.
Gentiemars. Sir (quoth the Gentleman) now you touch a matter of confequence indeed, and fuch as the very naming thereof maketh my heart to fhake and rremble. I remember well what Pbilip cominus feteeth downe in his Hiftory of our Councries calalaty, by that contention of thofe two Houfes, diftinguifhed by the Red Role and the White: but yet both in their Armes might juftly have borne the colour of Red', with a ficrie fword in a black field; to fignifie \& the White.

## (101)

a4the abundance of bloud and mortality which enfued in our Countrey, by that moft wofull and cruell tontention.
I will not ftand here to fet downe the particulars, arisberred \& gathered by the forefaid author, though 4 franger, which for the moft part he faw himfelfe, while hee lived about the Duke of Burgundy, and ing Lewes of France, of that time: namely the pitpifull defription of divers right Noble men of our di Realme, who befides all other miferies, were driven The mifery of aro begge openly in forraine Countries, and the like. England by baline owne obfervation in reading over our Counbylry aftaires, is fufficient to make me abhorre the meand pread us to the like in time to come:feeing that in my pliudgement, ne ither the Civill warres of Mavius and edilla, or of Pompey and Cefar among the Romanes, Wrmor yet the Guelpbians and Gibilines among the Ita-Guelphims (elintrs, did ever worke fo much woe, as this did to our and $G_{1}$ ibilimen zpoore Countrey. Wherein by reafon of the contenWhion of Yorke and Lancafter, were foughten fixteene ctor leventeen pitched fields, in leffe then an hundred whyeares. That is, from the eleventh or twelfth yeare roof King Richard the fecond his raigne, (when this ericontroverfie firft began to bud up) unto the thirwreenth yeare of K. Henry the feventh. At what time by curting off the chiefe titler of Huntingtons houfe, wato wit, yong Edward Plantaginct Earlc ot Warwick, Edward PlanSon and Heire toGearge, Duke of Claveace; the con- taginet Earle darention moit happily was quenched and ended, fiwherein fo many fields (as I have faid) were foughmeten between Brethren and Inhabitants of our owne Nation. And therein, and otherwife onely about the fame quarrel,were flain,murdered, and made away, about nine or ten Kings,and Kings Sonnes; befides above fortyEarles ${ }_{8}$ Marquefles, and Dukes of name:

## (102)

bur many more Lords, Knighrs, and great Genlemen and Captaines: and of the Common people without number, and by particular conjefture e er neare two huridred thoufand. For that in one B . tell, fought by King Edward the fourth, there ast recorded to be flaine on boch parts, five and dhify thoufand feven hundred and eleven perfons, te fides others wounded and taken prifoners, to be pu to death afterward, at the pleafure of the Conquerour : ardivers Battels after, ten thoufand flainzz a Battell. And in thofe of Barzet and Tukechm, fought both in one yeare.
This fuffered our afticted Country in thofe daym by this unfortunate and deadly contention, whio could never be ended, but by the happy conjundime of thofe two Houfes together, in Henry the fevent. neither yet fo( as appeareth by Chronicle) undill ( $x$ I have faid) the fate had cut off the ifflue maled the Duke of clarence, who was caufe of divers perils to King Henry the feventh,though he were in prion. By whofe Sifter the faction of Hunting ton at thr day, doth fecke to raife up the fame contention :gaine, with farre greater danger both to the Realine and to her Majefty that now raigneth, then evertre. fore.
And for the Realmc it is evident, by that it pinaí roome to ftrangers, Competitours of the Houlfe Lancafer: better able to maintaine their owne itis by fword, then ever was any of that linage before them. And for her Majefties perill prefent, it isn: thing hard to conjecture: feeing the fame title intex fore-faid Earle of warwich, was fo dangurous mex troublefome to her Grandfather (by whom fhe lod deth) as hee was faine twice to take armes inde fence of his right, againft the faid title, which wy in thofe dayes preferred and advanced by the friend

## (103)

of ciarence, before that of Henry: as alfo this of Hkn tingtox is at this day, by his faction, before that of her Majefty though never fo unjuftly.
Touching Huntingtons title, before her Majefty, $L_{a w j e r . ~}^{\text {. }}$ (quoth the Lawyer) I will fay nothing : becaufe in realon, I fee not by what pretence in the World, he may thruft himfelfe fo farre forth: feeing her Majefty is defended, not onely of the Houfe of Lascaffer, but alfo before him moft apparently from How Hunting, the Houfe of Torke it felfe, as from the eldcft ton maketh Daughter of King Edrvard the fourth, being the his title beeldeft Brother of that Houfe. Whereas Hunting- jefty.
ten claimeth onely by the Daughter of Gearge Duke of clarence, the younger Brother. Marry yet I muft confeffe, that if the Earle of warmisks title were better then that of King Henry the ferenth, (which is moft falfe, though many artempted to defend the fame by fword:) then hath Huntingtox * The moft of fome wrong at this day by her Majefty. Albeit in Hunsmgtoxs very truth, the * attaints of fo many of his Ance- Anceftors by flours by whom he claimeth, would anfwer him alfo fufficiently in that behalfe, if his title were otherwife allowable.
attainted of Treafon.

But I know befides this, they have another fetch The infimous of King Ricbard the third, whereby he would needs device of king prove his elder Brother King Edward to bee a Ba- Richard the ftard: and confequently his whole line, afwell male as female to be void. Which devife though it be ridiculous, and was at that time when it was firft invented: yet, as Ricbard found at that time a Doctor Sbaw, that fhamed not to publifh and defend the fame, as Pauls Croffic in a Sermon: and fobn of Nortbumberlayd my Lord of Leyceliers Father found out sia. divers Preachers in histime, to fet upthe title of Suffolke, \& to debale the right of K. Henries daughter, both in Lordon ${ }_{3}$ Cansbridge, $0 x$ ford, and other places,

## (104)

moft apparently againft all Law and reafon: fol doubr not but theie men would finde our alfo boad Shawes, Sands, and others, to fer out the title of $c t$ reate, before the whole intereft of King Henyy the feventh and his pofterity, if occafion ferved. Whinh is a point of importance to bee confidered by het Majefty ; albeit.for my part, I meane not not nou to ftand thereupon, but onely upon that ocher of the Houfe of Lancafier, as I have faid.
For as that moft hanourable, lawfull, and happy conjunction of the two adverfary Houfes, in King Henry the feventh and his Wife, made an end d the fhedding of Engl.fh bloud within it felfe, and brought us that moft defired peace, which ever fince wee have enjoyed, by the raigne of their we moft noble iffiee: fo the plot that now is in hand, for the curting of the refidue of that iffiue, and for recalling backe of the whole Title to the Houfs of Yorke againe ; is like to plung us deeper then erer in civile diforond, and to make us the bait of all ford raine Princes: Feeing there be among them at this The Line of day, fome of no fmall power (as I have faid) Tortug ith who pretend to bee the next heires by the Howif of Laxcafter: and confeguently, are nor like o give over or abandon their owne right, if once doore bee opened to contention for the fame, by difanulling the Line of King Henyy the feventh? wherein onely the keyes of all concord remaine knit together.
And albeit I know well that fuch as be of my Lord of Huntingtons party, will make finall accompt of the Titie of Lancalfer' a s leffie rightfull a grees deale then that of Yorke, (and I for my part meane nox greatly to avow the fame, as now it is placed, being my felfe no favourer of forraine Titles :) yet indifir ferent men have to confider how it was taken in times

## (105)

times palt, and how it may againe in time to come, if contention fhould arife : how many Noble perfo- The old eftinages of our Realme did offer themfelves to die in mation of the defence thereof: how many Oaths and Lawes were Haufé of 1 ma given and received throughout the Realme for eajer. maintenance of the fame, againft the other Houfe of rorke for ever : how many worthyKings were crowned, and raigned of that Houfe and Race; to wit, the foure mot Noble Hearies, one after another; the fourth, the firt, the fixt, and the feventh: who both 1 in number, government, fanctity, courage, and feats Q of armes, were'nothing inferiour (if not fuperiour) wo thofe of the other Houfe and Line of Yorke, after the divifion betweene the Families.

It is to bee confidered alfo as a fpeciall figne of the favour and affection of our whole Nation unto that Family: that Henry Earle of Richmond, though Henrv Earle dilcending but of the laft Sonne, and third Wife of of Richmond Jom of Gaunt, Duke of Lancafter, was fo refpei) Eted for that onely by the univerfall Realine: as they inclined wholly to call him from banifhment, and to make him King with the depofition of RichHard, which then ruled of the Houfe of roike, upon condition onely, that the faid Heary fhould take to or: Wife a Daughter of the contrary Family: fo great was in thofe dayes the affection of Englijb hearts tora wards the Line of Lancaffer, for the great worthimi neffe of fuch Kings as had raigned of that Race, how goud or bad foever their Title were : which I ftand not here at this time to difcuffe, but onely to infinuate what party the fame found in our Realme in timespaft; and confequently, how extreame dangerous the contention for the fame may be hereaf- The Line of ter : efpecially, feeing that at this day the remainder Tortugall. of that Title is pretended to reft wholly in a ftranger, whofe power is very great. Which we Lawyers

## (106)

are wont to efteeme as a point of no fimall impor. tance, for juftifying of any mans title to a King. dome.
Scbolar. You Lawyers want not reafon in that Sir (quod 1) howfoever you want right : for if you wille ea. mine the fucceffion of governements, from the be ginning of the World untill this day, either among The frord of Gentile, Jew, or Chriftian people, you fhall finde greaz force to that the fword hath beene alwayes better then halif Intific the ti- the title, to get, eftablifh, or maintaine a King. tle of K kingdome.

Great dangers. dome : which maketh me the more a palled to heare you difcourfe in fuch fort of new contentions, and forraine titles, accompanied with fuch power and ftrength of the titlers, which cannot bee butinf. nitely dangerous and facall to our Realme, if once it come to action; both for the divifion that is lite to be at home, and the variety of parties from . broad. For as the Prince whom you fignifie, will not faile (by all likelyhood) to purfue his title with all forces that hee can make, if occafion were offered : fo reafon of ftaze and policy will enforce other Princes adjoyning, to let and hinder him therein what they can: and fo by this meanes full we become fude and $1 /$ rael among our felves, one killing and vexing the other with the fword: and to forraine Princes we fhall be, as the Iland offt bamina was in old time to the Atbenians and Meytians: and as the Iland of cicilie was afterwardio the Grecians, Cartbaginians, and Romans: and as in our dayes, the Kingdome of Naples hath beene tothe Spaniards, French-men, Germans, and Venetians; That is, a batt to feed upon, and a gamesto figtr for.

Wherefore, I befeech the Lowd,to avert from us all oceafions of fuch miferies. And I pray you Sir, for that wee are fallen into the mention of thele

## (107)

matrers, to take fo much paines as to open unto me the ground of thefe controverfies, fo long now quiet betweene Yorke and Lancaffer: feeing they are now like to bee raifed againe. For albeit in generall I have heard much thereof' 'yer in particular, $I$ either conceive not, or remember not the foundation of the fame: and much leffe the flate of their feverall titles at this day, for that it is a ftudy not properly pertaising unto my profeffion.
The controverfie betweene the Houfes of Yorke and Laxsafter (quorh the Lawyer) took his atuall beginning in the iffue of King $\varepsilon d$ dward the third, The begin. who died fomewhat more then two hundred yeares ning of the agone: but the occafion, pretence, or caufe of that controverfie quarrell, began in the children of King Henry and Lancoffure. the third, who died an hundred yeares before that, and left two Sonnes ; Edroard, who was King aftee him, by the name of Edward the firt, and was Grandather to Edward the third : and Edmond (for his deformity called Crookebacke) Earle of laneaffer, and beginner of that Houfe, whofe inherizance afterward in the fourth difeent, tell upon ${ }_{2}$ Daughter named slanch, who was married to the fourth Son of King Edward the third, named 7obn of Gaux, for that he was borne in the City of Gaunt in Flanders, and fo by this his firt wife, hee became Duke of Lancaffer, and heire of that Houfc.And for that his Son Henry of Boling brooke (afterward cal- Edmoxd benookled King Heary the fourth) pretended among other of the Hourfe things, that Edmond Crooke back, great Grandfarther of Lancafer. „ to Blancb his mother, was the elder Sonne of King Blanch. Hearyshe third, and unjuftly pur by the inheritance of the Crowne, for that he was Crook-backed Iobn of Gaumt. and deformed: hee tooke by force the Kingdome fronk Kirbard the fecond, Nephew to King Edward the third, by his firft Sonne; and placed the fame

## (108)

How the King in the Houle of Lancafter, where it remained for dome was frift brought to the Houre of Lamasfer. three whole difeents, untill afterward, Edward Duke of Torke defcended of Iobn of Gaunts yonget brother, making claime to the Crowne by title of his Grandmother, that was heire to Lionel, Duke of clarence, Iobn of Gaunts elder Brother, tooke the $\mathrm{f}_{\mathrm{a}}$ me by force from Henry the fixt, of the Houfe of Lancaler, and brought it backe againe to the Houfe of Yorke: where it continued with much trouble in two Kings onely, untill both Houfes were joyned together in King Henry the feventh, and his noble iffue.

Herety wee fee how the iffue of Iohn of Gounts, Duke of $\boldsymbol{L}_{\text {ancafter, }}$ fourth Son to King Edwaid the third, pretended right to the Crowne by Edmond croskebacke, before the iffue of all the other three Sonnes of Edroard the third, albeit they were the elder Brothers, whereof wee will fpeake more hereafter. Now Iohn of Gaunt though hee had many children, yet had he foure onely, of whom iflie remaine, two Sonnes and two Daughters. The firft Son was Henry of Bolingbrooke, Duke of $L_{\text {ancafler, }}$ who tooke the Crowne from King Richard the fo cond, fis Unkles Sonne, as hath beene faid; and furt of all planted the fame in the Houfe of Lancafin: where it remained in two difeents after him, that is, in his Son Henry the fift, and in his Nephew Henry the fixt, who was afterward deftroyed, togecher with Heary Prince of wales, his onely Sonne and Heire, and confequently all that Line of Henry Bolingbrooke extinguifhed, by Edward the fourth of the Houfe of Torke.
The other Son of Iohn of Gauat, was Yobis, Duke The pedegree of Somerfet, by Katberine Sfinsford, his third wife: of king Heny which Lobra had iffue another Iobn, and he, Margaret the Fevench. his Daughter and Heire, who being married to Ed-

## (109)

mond Tyder, Earle of Richmond, had iffue Henry Earle of Richmond, who after was named King Heniy the feventh, whofe Line yer endureth.

The two Daughters of fobn of Gaunt were mar- The two ried to Portugall and Caffile: that is, Pbilip borne of Dangheers Blanch, Heire to $\varepsilon$ dmond (rookebath, as hath beene married to「aid, was married to 10 ha King of Portugall, of whom Portugalland is defeended the King that now pofleflech Portugall, Cafide. and the other Princes which have or may make title no the fame: and I(atberiza borne of Conflance, Heire of calite, was married back againe to Henry King of cafite in Spaine, of whom King Pbilip is allo defended. So that by this, wee fee where the remainder of the Houfe of Lancafter refteth, if the Line of King Heary the feventh were extinguifhed : and what pretext fotraine Princes may have to fubdue Forraine tius, if my Lord of Huntington either now, or after her tles.
Majefties dayes, will open to them the doore, by flutting out the reft of King Henries Line, and by drasying backe the title to the onely Houle of Yorke againe : which he pretendech to doe, upon this that ${ }^{4}$ I will now declate.

King Edward the third, albeit he had many chil- The iffue of dren, yet five onely will we fpeake of at this time : king Edward Whereof three were elder then fuba of Gaunt, and the 3 . one yonger. The firft of the elder was named $E d$ ward the blacke Prince, who died before his Father, leaving one onely Sonne named Richard, who afteriward being King, and named Ricbard the fecond, was depofed without iffue, and put to death by his Cofin germain, named Henry Bolingbrooke, Duke Lancafter, Son to Fobn of Gaunt, as hath beene faid; and fo there eaded the Line of King sdipards firft Sonne.
King Edwpards fecond Sonne, was william of Hatfold, that died without iffue.

## (IIO)

Fis third Sorne was Leonell Duke of clarence; whofe onely Daughter and Heire called Pbilip, was married to Edmond Mortimer Earle of March: and after that, Anne the Daughter and Heire of Mom timer, was married to: Ricbard Plantaginet, Dulke of Tarke, Son and Heire to Edmoxd of Langle), the firt Duke of rorke: which $\varepsilon d m a r d$ was the fift Son

Two Edmonds the two beginners of the ewo Houfes of Lincaflep and rarke.

The elaime and vitle of Terte.

The iffere of king $\varepsilon d_{\text {diard }}$ cle fourth. of King Edward the third, and younger Brother to Fobn of Gaunt. And this Edmond of Langley may bee called the firft beginner of the Houfe of Yoptei even as Edmond crookback, the beginner of the Houfe of Larcafter.

This Edmoind Langles, then having a Sonne no. med Richard, that married $\mathcal{A}$ ane Mortimer, Fole Heire to Leonell Duke of clareace, joyned two Lines and two Titles in one: I meane the Line of Lep. noll, and of Edmand Langley, who were (as hath bin faid) the third and the fift Sonnes to King Edparl the third. And for this caufe, the childe that was borne of this marriage, named after his Father Rickard Plantagizes, Duke of rorke, feeing himfelfit ftrong, and the firft Line of King Edward the thirds eldeft Son to be extinguifhed in the death of King Richard the fecond: and feeing william of Hatjoud the fecond Sonne dead likewife without iflue : mate demand of the Crowne for the Houfe of Yorke, by the title of Leonell the third Sonne of King $\varepsilon$ dward. And albeit hee could not obraine the fame in bis dayes, for that hee was flaine in a Battel! againt King Henry the fixt at wahefield: yet his Sonne Edwoard got the fame, and was called by the name of King $\varepsilon d x p a r d$ the fourth.
This King at his death left divers children, ar namely two Sonnes, Edward the fift and his Bro ther, who atter were both murdered in the Tower, as fhall be fhewed: and alfo five Daughters: cowit, Clizabetb,

## (111)

Elizabesh, cicily, $n n e$, Katberine, and Briges. Whereof, the firt was married to Henry the feventh. The laft became a Nunne, and the other three were beffowed upon divers other husbands.
Hee had alfo two Brothers: the firf was called The Duke of George Duke of clarence, who afterward upon his Clarence atdeferts (as is to be fuppofed,) was put to death in tainted by Callis, by commandement of the King, and his at- Parliameato rainder allowed by Parliament. And this man left behinde him a Sonne, named Edrpard Earle of warmick, put to death afterward without iffue, by King Henry the feventh, and a Daughter named 2:Margaret, Counteffe of Salisbury, who was married th: 10 a meane Gentleman named Richard Poole, by whom fhe had iffue Cardinall Poole, that died withfout marriage; and Henry Poole that was attainted and executed in King Henry the eight his time; itas alfo her felfe was) and this tienry Poole left a Daughter married afterward to the Earle of HunThingtom, by whom this Earle that now is maketh title to to the Crowne. And this is the effect of my Lord of Huating tons tithe.

The fecond Brother of King Edward the fourth, Lawas Richard Duke of Glocefter, who after the Kings :rdeath, caufed his two Sonnes to be murdered in the kTower, and tooke the Kingdome to himfelfe. And nafterward he being flaine by King Henry the feventh :uar Bo worth-feld, left no iflue behind him. Whereaptore King Heary the feventh defcending as hath bin The happy Shewed of the Houfe of Lancafter, by Fobn of Gaunts conjunation elaft Sonne and third Wife, and taking to Wife Lady of the twe Elizaben, eldeft daughter of King Edzard the Koufes. a fourth, of the Houfe of Yorke: joyned moft happily the two Families together, and made an end of all controverfies about the title.
Now King Henry the feventh had iffue three Children:

## (112)

The iffue of dren: of whom remainech pofterity. Firft, Hetw) K ing Howy the eighth, of whom is defcended our Soveraigne, the icenth.

The Line and Trike of Scot-1y, he had two Daughters : whereof the firft natiked Cand by Hargatet, eldeit D. uighater to King Henry the 7.

## Arbella.

 Margaret, was married twice ; firft to fames King of scolland, from whom are direatly difcended the Queene of Scotlend that now liverh, and her Sonne: and King 7 awses being dead, Margaree was mat ried againe to Archihald Dnuglas Earle of Anguif: by whom thee had a Daughter named Margarte, which was married afterward to Matnew Ste mawi, Earle of Len $x$, whofe Sonne Charles Ste mard wa married to Eluzabeth Candifh, Daughter to the pros fent Counteffe of Shrewsbury, and by her hath leff his onely Heire, a little Daughter named Arbolh, of whom you have heard fome fpeech before. hid this is rouching the Line of Scotland, defcending from the firft and eldeft Daughter of King Bemy the feventh.The Zine and Title of Suffolke by $M$ ary, second daughter to King Renry the 7 .

The iffue of Francis, olde? Drughter to Chaties Brandom, Duke of Euffolke.

The fecond Daughter of King Henry the levend called Mary, was twice married alfo: firit to the King of Erance, by whom fhe had no iffue : and atter his death to Cbarles Brandon Duke of Suffolke, by vhan fhe had two Daughters; that is, Francis, of with the Children of my Lord of HartJord do make thxis claime: and Elenor, by whom the iffue of the Earle of Darby pretendeth right, as fhall be declared. For that Francis the firft Daughter of Cbarles Rrandm by the Queene of France, was married to the Maro quefle of Dorfet, who after Charles Brandoas death was made Duke of Suffolke in right of his. Wife, and was beheaded in Queene Maries time, for hisconfpiracy with my Lord of Leycefters Father. And hie had by this man three Daughters: that is, fowe, that was married to my Lord of Leycefters Brother, and

## (113)

proclaimed Queene afice King Edwards death, for The iffue of which both free and her husband were executed: Francis eldeft Kacistrize the fecond Diughter, who had two da "ghere to Sonnes, yet living by the Earle of Harcford: and Mry the third D iugrer, whi h Iefr no Children.

The other Daughter of Cbaliss Brandon by the Quene of France called Etenor, was married to Georgel fifind Eiarle of Cumberland, who left a Diugher by her named Margiret, married to the Earie of Darhy, which yet liveth, and hath iffue. done PII And this is the tute of the H ufc of suffilke, def(t) cended from the fcoon 1 Diughter of K. Htayy the arfivenih, married (as hath been fhewed) to Charles the traydon D ike of Suftoike. And liy this, you may ne fie aifo how many there be, who do thanke their At tules to be far before that of my Lord of $\mathrm{H}_{\mathrm{kN} \text { IzMg - }}$ C taw, fenther right, l iw, reafon, or cor fideration of cer lome affaites may take place in our Realm : or fuis not, yat you cannot but imagine how many great Priaces and Porentates abroad, are like to (6) joyne and buckle with Hustog ons Line for the preeminence: if onee the matier fall agame to athentention hy excluding the Line of King Henry Wh the feventh, whit h G od forbid.

Truly Sir (quotn I) I well perceive that my Scholar. Lords turne is not io nigh as I had thought, whe- Huntington beet ther he exclude the Line of King Henyy, or ne: behind many of for if he csctuite that, then $m$ it he enter the othertites. Combat with forraine titers of the Houfe of Lancolles: and if he excluce it not, then in all apparance of reafon and in Law to (as yon have fard) Sthe fuccellion of the two D:ughters of King Heny Whe feventh (whiliyou coltingu in by the ivo names of Scoiland and $S_{u f f}$ Fike) mult needs abee as clearely before him and his Lime, 5 that deecnded only from Edrasm the fourth his Wrother, as the Qreenes tite thas now teigneth,
is before him. For th... warh Scotland, Suffolke and he: Majefly do hold all by one foundation, which is thounion of both Houles and Tules togecher, in King Henry the feventh her Majeflics Granufather.
That is true (quoth the Gentleman) and evi. dent enough in every mans eye ; and therefore no doubt: but as that souch is meant againft her Majeity, If occafion ferve, as aganeft the reft that hold by she Came title. A!'eeither Majefties ftate (the Lord be praifed) be fui $h$ at this cime, as it is not fafty to pretend fo much againef her, as againt the reft, whatfoever be meant. And that in eruth, more fhould be ment againft her highnes, then againft all the relt : there is this reafon;for that hermaje. fly by her prefent poffiffion letteth more their defires, then all the reil together with their future The poliey of the prerences. But as I have faid, it is not fafery for cenfpirasours for them, nor yer good policy to declare openly,what the deceiving of they meane againft her $M$ jefly. It is the beft her Maiefty. way for the prefent to hew duwne the reft, and to leave her Majefty for the laft low and upfhot to their game. For which caufe, they will feeme to make great difference at this dyy, betweene her Majefties tutle and the reff, that defeend in likewife from King Henn, the foventh: avowing the one, and difillowing the other. Albeit, my Lord of Leiceffers Father, preferred that of Sulfo:ke, when time was, before this of her $\mathrm{M} \cdot \mathrm{j}: \mathrm{At}$, and compelled the whole Realnac to fweare thereunto. Sach is the variable policy of men, that ferve the time, orrather that lerve themfelves, of all times, for therr purpofes.

I remember (quoth I) that time of the Duke, and was prefent my felfe, at fome of his Proclsmations for that purpofe : wherein my Lord his

## (iIj)

Sonne that now liveth: ocing then a doer, (2s. I can tell he was:) I marvsle how he can deale fo contrary now : preferring not onely her Majeftics title before that of suffilk (where of I wonder Iefl: becaufe it is more ganfull to ham, ) but alfo another much further of. But you have figns. fied the caufe, in that the umes are changed, and other bargaines are in hand of more inportance for him. Wherefore leaving this to be confidered by others whom it concerneth, I beieech you, Sir, (for that I know, your worfhip hath bceene much converfant among their friends and favourers) to tell me what are the barres and lets which they doe alledge, why the houfe of Sioulind and Suffolk defcended of king Heny the leventh his daughters, fhould not fucceed in th: Crowne of england after her Majefty, who ended the ling of the fame king by his fon; for in my fight the matter appearcth very plaine.
They want not pretences of barres and lets againft them all (quoth the Gentleman) which I Gentleasam. will lay downe in order, as I have heard them alledged. Firft, in the line of Scotland there are Earres pretended three perfons as you know, that may pretend againft the claim rifht, that is the Queem and her Con by the firt of Scotlandamis marriage of Margaret, and Arbella by the fecond. Suffolke. And gainlt the firft marriage, I heare notsing affitme. i; but againft the two perfons proceeding thereef, I heare them alledge three ftops, one for that they are fangers born out of the land, \& cen- Againk the fiquently incapable of inheritance within the Queen of Scetfame; another for that by 2 fpeci I teftament of land and hes king H.8 authorifed by a.legerall parliam theyare fonne. irclaked; 3 for that they are enemies to the religion now among us \& theretore co be dabarred. Agantt the fecond marriage of Margaret vith Agzinfi Srbeliop. Aukibald Djug'as whexeni etrboths is defcended.
they alledge, that the lard Arcbibald had a forme: wife at the time of that marriage, which lived long afrer : and fo neither that marriage law full, nor the iffue therof legirimate.

The fame barre they have againft all the houle and Line of Suffolke, for firft they fay, that Charlss Brandon Duke of Suffolke, had a knowen wife alive when he married Mary Queen of France, and confequently, that neither the Lady Erancesnor Elemer, borne of that marrıage, can be lawfully borne. And this is all, I can heare them fay agzannt the fucceffion of the Counteflieof Darb) defeended

Againft Darby. of Elemer. Bur againft my Lord of Barifords ch 1. dren, that came from Frances the eldeft daughter,I heare them alledge two or three battardies mare hefiews thes of the firft marrisge. For firt, they affirme that Henry Marquefic Dorlet, when hee mi rreed the Lady Framces, had to wife the old Eal of Arumails fifter. wholived both then and many yeares after, and had a provifion out of his living to her dying day wheity that m irriage could no way be good. Secondly that the ledy Kuhterme, daughecr to the faid Lady Fraxces, by the $M$ nques (by whom the Earl of Mareford had his childieri) was lawfully married to the Earle of Pembroke that now liveth, and confequently, could have no lawfull iffue by any other during his life. $3^{\text {ly }}$, that the faid Katbirine was never lawfully married to the faid Earl Herif ford, but bate him thofe children as his Concubine, which (is they fay) is defined and regittred in the Archb. of Canterhuries court, up in due examination taken by order of her IHjelly that now reigneth, and this is in effeet fo muth as I have heard them sll aledge, about their affars.

It is much (quoth I)that you have faid, if it may be all proved. Marry yet by the way, I cannot but fmile to heare my Lord of Legeffer allow of fo many baftardies now upon the Iflee of Lady

Frances, whom in time palt, when lane her eldeft daughter was married to his brother, he advanced ling with the inlegitmation before both the daughters of king houfe of suffolk. Hen') she cight. But to the purpole: I would gladly know what ground's of verty thele allegatoons have, and how far in truth th y may tioppe from inheriance: for in deed I never heard them Tod funetly alledged before.
Whereto anfwered the Gentleman, that our Gertiemay. frien: the Lawyer could beft refo ve that, if it picaied h.m to fpeake without his fee: though in fone points alledgen evety o.her mal (quoth he) that knowerh the tate and common government of England, may eafily give his judgement allo. Aid $i$ i the calc of balt... $d y$, it the matter may be Eaflardy. priverd, there is no d fil uli.y, but that no right to inherıtance can juflly bee pretended: as allo Forraine birth. (perhsps) in the cafe efforraine birth, though in this I am not focunning: but yet I fee by experience, that forrainers borne in other lands, can hirdly come and clame inheritance in England, aboit, to the contrary, I have heard great and long difp ites, but fuch as indeed pafied n.y capa. city. And if it might pleafe our triend here prefent to expound the thing anto us more cleatly, I for my part would gladly beflow the hearing, and that with attention,

To this anlwered the Lawyir, I will glad!y, Laxyer. fir, tell you my miade in any thing that it flall picafe you dem nd: and much more in this matter, wherein by occafion of eften conference I am fomewhat perfect. The impedimanes which thefe men alledge againtt the fucceflion of king Henty the 8 , his fifters, are of two kinds, 35 you fee : The one knowne and allowed in our law, as you have bafordies lawf.l well faid, if it myy be proved; and that is baftardy: Jozs. whereby they feek to difable all the whole inae

## (118)

and race of Suff ithe : as aifo Aibetin of the fecond and later houle of Scotland. Whereof it is to fmall purpofe to (peak any thing here : feeing the whole controverfie ftandeth upon a matter of fatt onely to be proved or improved by records and witineffes.Onely this I will \{ay, that fome of thefe baAardies, before named, are rife in many mens mouthes, and avowed by divers that yet live: but let other men looke to this, who have moff inter-

The impodimenes againf Scotland three in number.

A proteflation.

Touching the firlt impedment of forranne birth. eft therein, and may be moft damnified by them, if they fall our true. The other impediments, which are alledged onely againat the Queene of Scots and her fon, are in number three, as youtecire them : that is furraine birth, king Henriesteftament, and Religion: whercof I am content to fay fomewhar, feeing you defire it : albett there be fo much publifhed already in bookes of divers languages beyond the fea, as I am infurmed, concerning this matter, as more cannot be faid. But yet fo much as I have heard paffic among Lawyers my betters, in conference of thefe affaires: I will not let to recite unto you, with this provifo and proteftation alwayes, that what I peake, I fpeak by way of recitall of orher mens epinons : not meaning my felfe to mecurre the flatute of afo firming or avowing any petfons title to the crown whatfoever.

Firft then toushing, forraine bithh, there bee fome men in the world that will fay, that it is a common and generall rule of our $l \mathrm{lw}$, that no ftranger at al may inherit any thing by any means withim the Land: which in truth I take to be fpoken without ground, in that generall fenfe. For I could never yet come to the fight of any fuch common or univerfall rule: and I know, thatdivers examples may be alledged in fundry cafes to the contrary: ald by that which is exprefly fet

## (I19)

downs in the feventh ans ninth years of king Ed. the 4, and in the eleventh and fourtecath of Hen, the 4. it appeareih plainly that a ftranger may purchafe lands in England, as alfoi: hent by his wife, if he marry an inheritrix. Wherefore this comaion rule is to bee reftrained from that generality, unto proper inheritance only; in which The rrue Maxifenfe I do eafily grant, that our common Law ma againit Alihath beenof ancient, and is a+ this day, that no emb parfon born out of the allegiance of the king of England whofe father \& moth r were oo st the fame allegiance at the time of his bite: ihall be able to have or demand any heritage within the fame allegiance, as heire to any perfon. And this The fatute of unle of our common Law is gathtred in ihefe King Edward felf fame words of a ftatute made in ihe 25 . year of king Ed. the third, which indeed is the onely place of effect, that can be alledged out of our law againf the inheritance of frangers in fuch fenfe and cales as we are now to treat of.
And albeit now the ommon Law of our Country do runne thus in generall, yet will the frieuds of the $S$ ottifh claime affirme, that hereby that title is nothing let or hindred at all towards the Crowne; and that for divers manifeft and weighty reafons, whercof the prinapill are thefe which enfue.
Frft, is is common and a generall rule of our

Rearons why the Scottifl title is not letted by the Maxima againft Alicns.

An Alien may puichafe.

## ( 120 )

band, fhall enjoy the thard of his lands: but yet the Qaeene fhall not enjoy the third parc of the Crowne, after the Kıigs death: as well ap. peareth by exporience, and is to be feene by hav, Tenant by cour- Anmo 5. and 2I. of Eimsrd the third; and Aime tefie. 9.and 28 . of Henry the fixt Alfo it is a common rule, that the husband fhall hold his wives lands after iser death, as tenabt by costrefie during has life, but yet it holdeth not in a Kingdome.

In like manner, it is a generall and co nmon rule, that if a man dye feafed of Land in Feefirple, having daughters and no fonne, his linds Divifion among fhall be divided ty equall portions among his daughtcrs.

Executors.

The 2 reafun. daughters, which bolde th not in the Crowne: but rather the eldeft Diughter inheriteth the whole, as if fhe were the iffue.male. Soalfo it is a common rele of our law, that the execumror fhill have all the goods and chattels of the Teftaror, but not in the Crowne. And fo in many other cafes which might bee recited, it is evident that the Crowne hath priviledge above othets, and cannot be fubject torule, be it never fogenerall, except expreffe mention be made thereof in the fame law: as it is in the former place and a ftasure alledged: but rather to the contrary (as after fhall be fhewed) there is expreffeexesption, for the preregative of fuch as defeend of Royall bloud.

Their fecond reafon is, for that the demand or The Crowne no title of a Crowne cannot in true fenfe bee comfuchinherrarce prehended under the words of the former flatule, as is meantin the forbidding aliens to demand heritage wighin the Ratute.
allegiance of England: and that for two refpects.
The one, for that the Crowne it felfe cannot be called an heritage of allegiance, or withn allegiance, for that it is holden of no fuperionr upon eat th, but immediately from God himfelfe:
the fecond, for that this ftatute treateth onely and meanech of inheritance by defcent, as heyre to the fame, (for I have fhewed before that Aliens may hold lands by purchafe withinour Domaniorf) and then fay they, the Crowne is a thing in. The Crowne a corporate, and defeendeth not according to the corporation. common courfe of ocher private inheritances: but gne h by furceffion, as other incorporations doe. In figne whereof it is evident, that albeit the King be more favoured in all his doings, then any cin:mont perfon fhill be, yet cannor hee avoyd by law his graits and letters patents by reafon of his nonage (as other infints and common heires under age ma $y$ doe) but alwayes be faid to be of full age in refpet of h:s Crown: cven as a Prior, Parfon, Vicar, Deane, or orher perfon incorporate flall be; whth cannot by any meanes in law bee raid ro be within age, in refpect of their incorporations.

Whith thing maketh an evident difference in our esfe, from the meaning of he former ftatute: for that a Pior, Deane, or Parfon, being Aliens and no $D$-nizens, might alwayes in time of peace demand lathds in England, in relpect of their corpuratiens, notwithltanding the faid farate or common law ag inft Aliens, as appearecth by many booke cales yet extant: as allo by the ftatute made in the eme of King Richard the fecond, which was after the forefadd it atute of King $E t$ wird the third.

The third reafon is, for that in the former fta- The 2 : reafon. ture is felfe of King Eamasyd, there are excepted exprefly from this generall rule, Infantes $d^{\prime} \mathrm{Rcy}$, The Kings iffue excepred by name. that is, the Kings off fpring orifiue, as the word Infart doth Gignifie, both in France, Portugall, Spaine, and other Countries: and as the Latine word Liberi (which anfivereth the fame) is taken

## (122)

eommonly in the civill 1 ww . Neither may we reLiterermm. F.de ftrane the french words of that Sasure Infonts dow wab. $\mathrm{gigh}_{\mathrm{g}}$ ?

The forrthreafon The Kings meaming

The matches of 3 Fingland with forsigners.

Riy, to the kings childrein onely of the firt degree (as Come doe, fur that the barrenne?fe of our linguage doth yeeld us no other word for the fame) but rather, that therby are und rit od, as well the aephewes and other difcendanis of the kiag or blood Royall, as h's immediate children. Forit were both unreafonable and ruliculous to imgin that kin; Edearan by this Atarute, would go about co difiniticerit his own nepisews, if he fhould have any borne out of his owin allegiance (as eafily he migh, it th tt time) his fons being math froad from E gland ; and the olock Priace, his eldett fon having twroclaldren borne beyond the feas: and eoniequently, it is apparent, that this rule or maxime lee downagaintt Aliens is no way to be ftrerched againft the defcendants of the king or of the blood Royall.

Therr fourth reafon is, that the meaning of king Edmard and hischildren (living at fuch time as this flature was made) could not be, that any of their linage or iffue might be excluded in law, from inheritasce of their right to the Crowne, by their foraine birth whereloever. For nothetwife, it is not credible that they would fo much have ditiperfed their own blood in other Countries, as they did, by giving their daughters to itrangers, \& other meanes :as Lenel the kings third fon was nurried in Millan, and lobn of Gaunt the fourth Con,gave his two daughters, ploitip and Katherine to Portugall and Caitile; and his neece $\mathbf{F}$ san to the king of Scots : as Thomas of Woodfo. ke allo the yongeft brotker, marr ed his two daughters, the one so the king of Spaine, and the other to Duke of Britaine. Which no doubt (they being wife Priuces, and foneer of the blood Royal) would never
have done; if they bad magined that hereby their iflue fhould have loft all claime and title to the Cruwn of England : and therefore it is molt evident, that no fuch bar wasthen extant or imagin'd

The fifereafon 15 , that divers perfons born out of all Englifh dominion and allegiance, both before the Conqueft and fince, have bin admitted 10 the fuccefion of our Crown, as lawfull inheritours, without any exception againft them for their foraine birth As before the Conque\& is evi. dent in yong Edgar Etbelirg boine in Hungarie, and thence called home to inherit the Crowne, by his great unckle king $\varepsilon d$ mard the Conf fior, with full confent of the whole Realm ; the B. of Worcefter being fent as Ambafiador to fetch him home, w th his father named Edward the out-law.

And fince the Conquett, it appeareth planly in king Stephen and king Hent $y$ the fecond, bork of them borne out of Enylifh dominions, and of Parents, that at their birth, were not of the Englifh allegiance; and yet were they both admitted to the Crowne. Yong Arthur alfo Duke of Britain by his mother Conftance that matched with Geffray king Henty the feconds fonne, was declared by king Richard his unckle, at his departure tow ards Pol.lib. 1 s.Flos. Jerufalem, and ty the whole Realme, for law- hif.izo8.
full heire appareut to the Crowne of Enigland, though he were borne in Bricaine nut of Englifh allegiance; and fohe was taken and judged by all the world at that day: albeit, after king Richayds death, his other uncle Iobn, moft tyr.annoufly took both his kingdome and his life from him. For which notable injuftice, he was detefted of all men hoth abroad and at home; \& moft apparentJy [rourged by God, with grievous and manifold plagues, both upon himfelf and the Realm, which yoelded to his ufurpation, So that by this alfo it ap-

## (124)

The 6-reafon, The ivdgement and fentence of Whenry the ferenth.
pearecth, what the praticic: of our Counsrey hath beene from time to cime in this cafe of furane birth: which praetice is the beft interpreter of our common Englifh law : which depa nderh efpecally, znd moft of all, upon cuftome : nor can the adverfary alledge any one example to the contrary.

Their fixt, is of the judgement and featence of King H. $\boldsymbol{n}$ ク che feventh, and of his Councell: who being tojecher in coufultation, at a certaine time about the marri ige of Margaret his eldeft daughzer into Scorland: Come of his Consell moved this doubr, what fhould enfue, if by chance the kings if it e male fhould frile, and fo the fuceffion devolve to ehe hi yees of the faid Maigute, as now it doth ? Wh-resheo that w fe and moll priudent Priace mazée anfwer: thet if a ay fuch ricene Thould be, it could nor be pacejudicial to England, being the bigger pare, but rather beneficiall frit that it Thould draw Scotland to England: than ts, the le ffer to the more: even as in times pall th happened in Normandy, Aquitaine, and lome nther Provinces. Which anfiwer appeafed alid dubuts and gave fingular content to thofe of his Councell, as polid we wriveth, that lived at that tmen, and wrote the Ppeciall matters of thac reigne, by the kings uwne influction. So that hereby wee fee no queftion made of king renry or his Coinncellors touching forraine birth, to let the fucceffi. on of Lady Margarets iffue : which no doubr would never have beene omitted in that learned affembly, if any law at that time had beene effeemed or imagined to beare the fame.

And thefe are fix of their priscipalleft reafons to prove, that neither by the words nor meaning of our common lawes, nor yet by cuftome or praArice of our Realme, an Alien may bee debarred from claim of his intereft to the Crowne, when

## (125)

If falleth to him by rightuin defcene in blood and The g.reafon: fircefilion, But in the particular cafe of the Queen The Queene of of Scots and her fon, they doe adde another rea. Scors and her fon or two:thereby to prove chem in very deed ta tagne Aliens. be no Aliens: Not only in refpect of thers of ten and continuall mixture with Engliffa blood from the beginning (and efpecially of late, the: Queens Grandnother and husband being Englifh, and fo her fonne begotten of an Englifh futher) but alfo for two other caufes and reafons, which feeine in trush of very good importance. The firft is, for thit Scotland by all Engl:fhmen (howfoever the Scois deny the fame) is taken and holden as fubjet to England by way of Homage; which many of their kings at divers times have acknowleiged: and confequently the Queene and her fom being borne in Scotland are not borne our of the allegiance of Eugland, and lo no forrainers. The fecond caufe or reafon is, for that the forenamed ftatute of forrainers in the 25 yeare of King Eaiparad the third, is intitled, of thaje that are borne beyond the leas. And in she body of the faid ftatute, the deubt is moved of children borne out of Englifh alleg ance beyond the feas: whereby cannot bee underftood Scotland, for that it is a prece of the connment land within the feas. And all our old Records in England, that talke of fervice to bee done within thefe tivo countries, have ufually thefe Latin words, 1 nfraqua iuo mins, or in French diens lez qustre ners ${ }_{2}$ that is, w thin the foure Seas: whereby muft reeds be underftood ar well Siorland as England, and that pe haps for the reafon before mentioned, of the fubjection of Scorland by way of Homage to the Crowne of England. In refpect whereof it may be, that it was accounted of old but one dominion or allegiance. And confequently, no man borne theresn can bee accounted

## (126)

counted an alie ato Eneli na. And this fial fuufice for the firf point, touching foragine Natviry.

The fecond impediment againft the Q of Scots, \& her fon, which is K.Henry the Q. his tefament.

For the fecond impediment objected, wh ch is the teftament of King Henvy the eight, zuthorized by Parliament, wherby they affim the fucceffion of Scotland to be excluded: it is not precifly true that they are excluded, but onely that they are put back behunde the fucceffi on of the houl ot Suffolk. For in that pretended Teftament (which fter fhill be proved to be none indeed) King $H(n)$ ) 0 difpofeth,that after his own children( (f they fh) ld chance to dye without ffue) the Crewne flall pafie to the heires of Frances \& of Elenor, his neeees hy his yonger fifter Mary Queene of France: and after them (deceafig allo without flive) the fucceffion to returne to the nextherre againe. Wherby it is evident, that the fucceffion of $M$ ergaret Queene of Scotland, h.s eldeft filter, is not excluded; but thruft back onely from their due place and order, to expe et the remainder, which may in time be left by the yonger. Whereof in mine opinion, doe enfue fome confiderations a gainft the prefent pretenders themfelves.

Firft, hat in King Henries judgement, the former pretended rule of foraine buth, was no luffi. cient impedment againft Scotland; for if it had bin, ne doubt but that he would have named the fame in his alleaged teftament, and thereby have utterly excluded that fucceffio. But there is no fuch thing in the teftament. Secondly, if they admit The fueceffion of this teftament, which alotteth the Crown toScotScollaud next by tine indgement of the comperitors.

Forain birth no impediment in the iudgement of K . Henry the 8.
land, next after Suffolk; then, feeing thivell the houle of Suftolk (by thefe mens aftertions) is cxcluded by baftardy; it muit nceds follow, thatScotland by their own judgement is next, \& fo this reftament wil make aganft them, ?s indeed it doth in all points molt apparantly, but only that it preferrech

## (127)

ferrech he houfe of Sulfoik, before that of Scotland. And therefore (I think fir) that you miftake fome what bout therr opinion in alleaging this iffament. For I fuppofe, thar no man of iny Lord of Huatingtons faction, will alleage or urge che sefimony ot his teftament; but rather fome friend of the boufe ot suff lk, ia whofe favour, I take it, that it $w$ is firft of all firged.
It may be (qu th the Gentleman) nor will I Gextlewten fand obftnatly in the contrary; for that it is hard cometime to jroge of what faction each one is, who difcourfeth of chefe affaires. But yet I marve! (ifit were as you lay) why Letuffers Father afiet K.Edwardrdeath, made no mention therof in the favor of Suffolk, in the other teftament which then he prochamed, as made by K. Edward deceafed, for preferment or Suff Ih before bis own fifters.

The caufe of this is vident (juoth the Lawyer) Lawer. for thatitmade nor fifficeruly for his purpore: The Dufen which wasto difinhert the two d ughters of Kıng Northumberg Heny himfelfe, and adyance the houfe of sufote lands drist before thim both.

A notable change (quoth the Gentleman) that Gentlemsm a citle fo much exalted of late by the Father, above all order, right, ranike and degree; fhould now be fo much debafed by the Son, as though it were not worthy to hold any degree, but rather to be traden under-foor for pla in baftardy. And you ree by this, how true it is which I told you before; dealing ot the that the racc of Dudlies are moft cunning mer- houfe ot Dusker. chants, to make their gaine of all th ness, men and timesand as we have frene now two teftaments alleaged, the one of the Kungs father, and the other of the kings forne, and both of them in prejudice of the reftators true fueceffors: fo many good fubjects begingreatly to fear, that we may chance

## Iamjer.

The authority and occafion of King, Henries eeftament.
(128)
to fee fhortly a third 1 eitament of her Myjeliy for the titaling of Huntumgton, and cxurpation of King Henvies blood, \& that before her Myctly can think of fickneffe: where in I befeech the Lord I be no Prophet. But now, fir, to the foteiald Will and Teftament of King Henty, I have of een heard in truth, that the thing was counterfert, or at the leaft not able to be proved: 2 ud ihat it was difcovered, re jected, and defaced in Quren hatites time: 'bus I would gladly underftand what you Lawyers efteeme or judge thereof.

Touching this matter (quoth the Lawyer) it cannot be dented, but that 11 the 28 , and 36 years of King Herries reign, upon confideration of fome doubt and ittefolution, which the King himelfe had fhewed, to have about the nrder of fieceffion in his owne children, as alfo for taking away ali occafions of controverfies in thofe of the next blood; the whole l'arliament gave authonny unto the faid King, to debate and determane thofe matters himfelfe, toget.er with his learued enun cell, who beft knew the lawes of the Realme, and titles that any man might hive thereby : and that whatfoever fucceffion his Majefly fhould declare as moft right and law full under his leterers patents fealed, or by his laf Will and Teftament rightfully made and figned with his owne hand: that the fame hould bee received for good and lawfull. Upon pretence whereof, foon after King Hearies death, there was fhewed a Will will the kings flamp at the fame, and the names of divers witneffes, wherein (ashath beenefaid) the fucceffion of the Crowne, after the kings owne children, is affigned to the heyres of Frances and Elenore, Neeces to the king, ly his younger Sifter. Which aflignation of the Crown, being as it were a mest gift in prejudice

## ( 137 )

of the elder fifters right (as alfo of the right of Frances and Elcaor themfelves who vere ornitted in the fame affignation, and their heires intituled onely) was citermed to be againft all reafon, law, and nature, and confequently not thought so pro- The Kings coed from fo wife and fage a Prince as K. Henrie Teflament was knowne to be : but rather, either the whole foxged. forged, or at lealt vvife that claufe inferced by other, and the Kirgs ftamp fet unto it, after his death, er when his Majefly lay now paft underAtading. And hereof there wanteth not divers muft evidentreafons and proofes.
For firft, it is not prob able nor cred ible, that King Henrie would ever go about, againft lave and reao fon,to difinherit the line of his eldeft fifter, without any profic or intereft to himfelfe: and thereby, give mof evident occafion of Civill war and difcord within the Realm, feeing, that in fuch a cale of manifeft and apparent wrong, in Co great. a mater, the authoritie of Pa lament, sa keth little

The firf reajor. Injufice and imptro probabilits effect, againft the true and lawfull inheriter: as well appeared in the former times and contentions of Hen:ie the Gxth, Edravd the fourch, and Richard the third: in whofe reignes, the divers and contraric Parliaments made and holden, is gainft the next inficritor, held no longer with any niwn, then uncill the other was able to make his owne pattic good.

Solikewife, in the cafe of King Edroard the The exthird his fueceffion to France, in the righe of his areple of mother, though he were excluded by the generall Frence. affembly and confent of their Parliaments $;$ yes he efteemed not his right extinguifhed thereby: as neither did other Kings of our Countrie that enfued aftes hurs. And for our peefent cale, if nothing elfe fhould have reîrained King Henrie, K
from

## ( x 38 )

from fuch open injuftice towards his eldeft fifter : yet this cogitation, at leaft, would have ftyed him : that by'giving example of fupplanting his elder fifters Line, by vertue of a teftament orpretence of Parliament 3 fome other might take or cafion to difplace his children by like pretence: as we fee that Dube Dudley did foone after by a forged teftament of King Edswasd the fixt. So ready Schollars there are to be found, which eafily will learne fuch leffons of iniquity.
The fecond
Secondly, there be too many incongruties and indignities in the faid pretended Will to proceed froni fuch a Prince and learned councell as King Hearies was. For firft, what can be more ridiculous, than to give the Crowne to the heies of Francis and Eleaor, and not to any of themfelves? or what had they offended that their heires fhould enjoy the Crowne in their right, and not they themelelves ? What if King Henries Children fhould have dyed, whiles Lady Frarcis had been yet alive? who thould have poffefled the Kingdome before her, feeing her Line was next ? and yet by this teftament fhee could not pretend her felfe to obtaine it. But rather having marryed A-

Adrian Stokes. drien Stokes her horfe-keeper, fhe mult have fuffered her fonne by him (if fhe had any) to enjoy the Crown : and fo Adrian of a Serving man and Malter of Horfes, fhould have become the great Mafter and Protector of Ergland. Of I. keabfurditie is that other claufe alfo, wherein the King bindeth his owne daughters to marry by confent and direstion of his counfell, or otherwife to leefe the benefit of their fucceffion : yet bindeth iot his Neices daughters, to wit, the daughters of Francis \& Elenor (if they had any) to any fuch condition.

Thirdly, there may bee divers caufes and ar-

## (139)

guments alledged in law, why this pretended will $T$ be third is not authenticall : if otherwife, it were certaine reafon. that Kug Henrie had meant it: firf, for that it The preis not agreeable to the mind and meaning of the fuppojed Parthament, which intended onely to give autho- Will is nor ritic fotdeclaration and expliction of the true authentiarle : and $n x$ for don tionn, or intricating of the call. fanie, to the ruine of the Re..Ime. Secondly, for that there is no lawfull and authenticall Copie cxt. at thareof.but onely a bare mrolement in the Chancere, wink is not fufficient in fo wecighty an Af fure : no wienclle of the privic Councell or of Nobilite to the fame : whish had been convenient in fogreat a cafe (for the beft of the witneffes therem named, is Sir colin Gates, whofe milerabledeath is well knowne :) no publike Notary, in probation of the will befere any Bufloop, or any lawfull C ourt for that pu:pofe : no examination of the witnelif s; or other thing orderly done, for lawfull authorizing of the matter.

But of all otherthings this is moft of importance: that the King never fet his owne hand to The dif: the forefiid $W_{1}$ ll, but his ftampe was put there- proving of unto by othess, either after his death, or when he the Wil by was pait remembrance: as the lure Lord paget in moitneffes. tie beginnitig of Queen Marres dayes, beng of The Lord the Privic Councel!, firf of all oikerdifoovered Paget. the lame of his owne accord, and upon meere motion of confcience, confefli'g before the whole Councell, and afterward alfo befure the whole Pallament, how that himfelfe was privy thereunro, an paitly alfo culpable, (being drawn the kunto, by the inftigation and forable authority of others :) but yet afterward upon other more godly motions derefed the device : and fo of his owne free-will, vety honourably went and offred the K 2 difcom

## (140)

sir Edvv. difeoverie thereof to the Councell. As alfo did Si. Montague Eururd Montague, Lord chicfe luflice that had bren privy and prefent at the faid doings, and one William Clarke, that was the man whio put the ftamipe unto the paper, and is afcribed among the ot er pretenied watnefles, confelted the whis le premitles to be true, and purchafed his pardon for his offence therein. Whereupon Queen OMarie and her Councell, caufed prefently the faid Inrolement, lyingin the Chancerie to be cancelled, dc= faced and abolithed.

And fithence that time in her Majeflies dayes that now liveth, about the 11 .or 12 yeare of her reigne, (it I count not amiffe) by occafion of a ecrtaine litele booke (pread abioad at that tume very fecretly, for adyancing of the houfe of SufA meeting folke, by pretence of thus Tcftament: I rememlogetber $a$ - ber well the place where the late Dake of Norbout this folk, the Marquefle of W inchefer ( which then matter of was Treafurer) the old Earles of Arundell and the Nobi- penbroole that now are dead, with my Lord of lity. penbrook that yet liveth, (as alfo my Lord of Lefceffer himaclfe, if I bee not deceived) with divers others, met together upon the matter : and afser long conterence about the forefsid pretenfed will, and many proofes and reafons laid downe, why it could not be truc or authenticall : the old Earle of Penbrook protefling that he was wath the King in his chamber from the frift day of his fickne fle unto his laft houre, and thereby could well affure the talfification thereof: at length it was mored, that from that place they fhould goe, with the relt of the Nobility, and proclaime the Queen of 2r. Lord of Scotland beire apparent in Cheap-fide. Wherein my Leicoft. Ga Lord of Leyceffer (as I take it was then as forgaine play- ward is any man clfe: how bee it, now for his thdoukle.

## (141)

proht, he be turned afide, and would turne back igain to morrow next for 2 greater commodity.
And albeit, for fome caufesto themfelves belt known ,they proceeded not in the open publifhing of their determination at that time : yet my Lord of Penbrook now living can beare witneffe that thus much is true : and thar his father, the old Barle, at that time told him openly before the other Noblemen, that he lisad brought him to that afiembly and place to inftrut him in that truth, and to charge him to witneffe the fame, and to defend it aloo wwith his fword (if need required) after his death. And I know that his Lordhhip is of that honour and Noblity, as he cannor leave

The old Earle of Penbrecks admonition to the Earl his fon, yee living. off eafily the remembrance or due regard of fo worthy an admonition. And this Chal! fuffice for the fecond impediment, imagined to proceed of this fuppofed Teftamient of King Henrie the eighth.
As for the third impediment, of religion, it is not generall to all : for that only one perfon (if I be not deceived) of all the Competitors in K . Henries Line can bee touched with fufpition of different Religion, from the prefent itate of England. Which perfon notwithltanding (as is well baowne ) while fhee was in government in her owne Realme of Scotland, permitted all liberty of Confcence, and free exercife of Religion to thofe of the contrary profeffion and opinion, wvithout reftraint. And if fhe had not, yer doe I not fee, either by prefcripr of law , or practife of thefe our times, that diverfity of Religion, payy faxy juft Inheritors from enjoying their due poffeffions, in any flate or degree of private men : and much leffe in the claime of a Kingdome: which alwayes in this behalfe as hath been (aid before) is preferred in privildge, $\mathrm{K}_{3}$ This

## (142)

frinces of This we fee by experience, in divers Countrics and parts of the worid at this day: as in Gembany, where among fo many Princes, and to aindial in religion as they be: yet every one thend to the flate whereto he $h$ ith right, wirhour ucfi= ftance for his religion. The exin ples alin of bio Majefly that now is, and of her sitere b. firf, is evident, who being known to be of two :lteren= Qa. Mary inclinations in religion, and the whule Realme 2ucen E- divided in opinion for the lame caule : ya buch it liz abech. them at their fevetall timas swith generall umile it of all, were admisted to therl law tull mhe tame) * The Dud-excepting ondy a feo * tr i ors againtt the fir r . Icis Mon- mer, who with twod her right, as alfi in lier bie ficur.

Kivg of
Navarre prinet of
Condy. right of her Mareftic thate is preefent, and that not for Religion, (as appe wed by there owne conteffion after) but for - mbition and defireculthgite, Monfieur, the Kings brorher and herre of Fianir, as all the world knoweth, is wecll secept d, favou. red, and admitted for fucceffor if that Coromic, by all the Pioreftants at this ci iy of that Coun ry, not withftanding his opuion in religron knowne to be different. And 1 doubr not, but the King of Nizuarre or Prince of Condy, in the conterary pait would thinke themfelves greatly sipured by the Atre of ranace, which is difetent from thew in religion at this $d \cdot y$, if after che death of th. $K_{1} g$ that now is, and his beether wribterutific, (if God Io difpure) they thould be barrd from whicriting the Crowne, ander pretence and of their Religion My Lord of Huatungion himfilfe alfo, is he not knowne to $b$ e of a diffecene ruguion Sify Lard tronih prifent fate of Engl nd $\}$ and thit, fifle at Hon- wete Kugg to marrown next, he would alter the rinutons reizion. religion, nows ufid and eftabliched withon the Rcalme ?

But

## ( 143 )

But as I Caid in the beginning, if one of a whole fimily, or of divers families be culpable, or to be touched herein ; what have the reft offended thereby? will you exclude all,for the milfike of one? And to defcend in order; if the firft in K . Henries line, after her Majefty may be touched in this point, yet whyfhould the reft be damnified thereby? The K of Scotland her fon, that next enfueth to (peak in equity) why fhould he bee fiut out for his religion? And are not all the other in like manner Proteftants, whofe difcent is confequent by nature, order, and degree.
Forthe yong K. of Scotland (quothI) the truth is,tbat alpayes for mine oron part, I bave bad great hope and expecfition of brm, not onely for tbe conuipt tobich commonly men bave of fuch Orient youths, borne to kingdomes; but c/Pecially for that I underffood from time to time, that bis education wasin all learning, princely exercifes, and infruGion of true religion, under vare and vertuous men for that purpofe. Whercby I conceived hope, that be might not onely become in time an bonourbble and profitable neigbbour unto us, for af $u_{0}$ tance of the cioppell in these parts of the world; but alfo (if God Jbould deprive us of ber Maiefty mitbout iffue ) might be a meane by bis fucceffion to unite in Concord and Government the trwo Realmes together, which heretof re bath beene fought by the price of many a thoufand mens houd, and not obtained.
Marry yet now of late ( I know not by what mean.s) there is begun in mens hearts a certaine miflke or grudge againft him, for that it is given ant every where that he is inclined to be a Papift,and an enemy to her Majefties proceedings, which argueth him verily of fingul ar ingratitade

$$
\mathrm{K}_{4}
$$

## ( 144 )

if it be true, confidering the great helpes and pro. section which he hath received from her Highnes ever fithens he was borne.

And are you fo fimple (quoth the Gentleman) as to beleeve everie report that you heare of this matter? know you not, that it is expedient for my Lord of Leycefter and his faction, that this youth, above all other, bee held in perpectuall difgrace with her Majefty, and with this Realune ? You knows, that Richard of Gloucefter had never The device been able to have ufurped as he did, if hee had so Cet out not firft perfwaded K Edmard the fourth, to hate ber Maje- his owne brother the Duke of Clarence, which fy with Duke food in the w y between Richard and the the young King of Scotland. thing, which he moft of all chings coveted : that is, the poffibilutie to the Crowne, and fo in this cafe is there the like device to be obferved.

Fot truly, for the yong King of Scotlands religion, it is cvident to as many as have reifon, that it can bee no other of it felfe but inclined to the beft; both in refpect of his education, inftruction, and converfation wiith thofe of true religion: as alfo by his former aftions, Ediets, Government, and privare behaviour he hath declared. Marrie thefe men whofe profit is nothing leffe, than that he or any other of that race fhould doe well: doe not ceafe dayly by all fecret wayes, drifts, and moleftations poffible, to drive him either to millike of our religion, or elfe to incurre the fufpiton thercof, with fuch of our Realme, as otherwile would be his beft friends : or if not this, yet for very need and feare of his owne life, to moke tecourfe to fuch other Princes abroad, as may moft offend or millike this ftet.

And for this caufe, they fuborne certaine bufie fellowes of their owne crew and faction, per-
taising to the minifterie of Scotlands, (but unwor- The intolthy of lo worthy a calling) to ufe fuch into- lerable prolencie towards their King and Prince, as is not ceedings of onely undecent, but intolerable. For he may doe certaisMinothing, but chey will examine and difculfe the niffers in fame in Pulpit. If hee goe but on hunting, when S cotland it pleafeth them to call him to their preaching : if $\operatorname{againff}$ he make but a dinner or fupper, when, or where, their King or with whom they like not: if he receive but a by fuborcouple of horfes, or other prefent from his frtends nation of or kinfemen beyond the feas : if hee falute cr ufe his earecourceounly any man, or meffenger which com. mies in meth from them (as you know Princes of their England. noblity and courtefie are accuftomed, though they come from their enemies, as very oftea hath beene feene, and highly commended in her Majeftie of England:) If he acule familiarly with any Ambaffador which liketh not them: or finally, if hee doe Cay or fignifie any one tining whatfoever that pleafeth not their humour, they wil prefently as feditous Tribunes of the people, exclaime in publicke, , and ftepping to the Pulpic where the Word of the Lord onely ought to be preached, will excite the Communalty to difcontentation, inveying againtt theirSoveraigne with fuch bitternes of fpeech, unrererend tearmes, and infolent controlements, as is not to be fpoken : Now imagine what her Majefty and hergrave councell would do in England, if fuch proceedings thould be ufed by the Clergy againft them.
No doubt(quoth I) but that fuch unquiet fpirits Schollar. fholdd be punifhed in our Realme. And fo I faid of late to their moft reverend and worthy Prelate Sir Parrick and Primate the Arch-bithop of St. Andrews, with Adamion whom it was my luck to come acquainted in Archbißh. Londons whither he was come by his Kings ap- of St. An poyntment drawes.

## $(146)$

pointment(as he faid)totreatcertain affairs with our Q . and Councell. Andtalking with him of this diford $r$ of his minifferie, he confefled the fame with much griefe of mind, and inld me, that le had preached thereof before the K. himfelfc, detefting and accufing divers heads therof, for which caufe he was become very odious to them and other of their fattion, both in Scoiland and Englund. But he faid, that as he had given the reatons of his doings unto our Qu. 10 meaneth he fhortly to do the fame unto Monficar Be$\left\{\tau_{2}\right.$, and to the whole Church of Genevz, by fending thither the Articles of his and their do ngs, protelt ing uato me that the proceedings and attempts of thofe fattious and corrupt men was moff fcandalous, fed tious and perilous both to the K. perfon, and to the realm; being fufficient indeed, to alienate wholy the yong Prince from all affetion to our religion, when he thall fee the chiefe Profeffors thereof to behave chemfelves fo undunfully tow ards him.

Gentl. Treatons pletted a- thereby to procure him moft evill will and dangainft the gee, both at home and from England. For which King of caufe alio, they have pratifed fo many plors and Scots. That is the thing which thefe men, his competitors, moft defire (quotb tbe Gentleman) hoping treacheries with his owne fubjects againft him ; hoping by that meanes to bring the one in diftruft and hatred of the other, and confequently the K. in danger of deftruction by his uwn And in this machınation, they have behaved themfelves fo dexteroully, fo covertly ufed the Eannage and contriving hereof, and fo cunningly convey:d the execution of many things : as it might, inceed, feem apparent to the yong K. that the whole plot of treafons againt lus Realine,
and Perfon, doth come from England, thereby todrive him into jealoufic of our ftate, and out flate of him:and all this for their owne profit.
Neither is this any new device of my Lord of Leiceff to draw men for his own gain into danger and hatred with the ftate, under other preunces. For I could tell you divers fories and ftratagems of his cunning in this kind, and the one farre different from the other in device:but yet all to one end. I bave a friend yet living, that was torpards the old Earle of Arundel in good tredit, and by that means bad occafionto deal with the late Duke of Norfolk in bts sbiefeft affaires before bis troubles. This man is wont to report frange things froes the Dukes onone moutb, of my L.of Leicefters moft treacberous dealing towards Leycefters bim,for gaining of bis bloud, as after appeared, al- cunning beit the Duke woben be rep rted the fame, miftru. device for Acd not fo much my Lords malice therein. But the overthrow fum of all, is this in effect : that Leicefler having ing the D. a fecret defire to pull down the faid Duke, to the of Norf. end that he night have no man above himfelfe, to hindex him in that whrch he moft defireth; by athoufand cunning devices drew in the Duke to the cogitation of that marriage with the Queen of scotland, which afterward was the caule or occal:on of his ruine. And hee behaved himCelfe fo dexteroufly in this drift, by fetting on the Duke in the one fide, and allo by intrapping him on the other: as Iudas himfelte never plaid his part more cunningly when hee fupped with his Mafter, and fet himfelf foneer, as he dipt his fooon in the fame difh, \& durtt before others, aske who fhould betray him ? meaning that night to doe it himfelfe, as he flewed Coon after fupper, when he came as a Captaine with

## (148)

with a band ot Confpir tors, and with a courseours kifi: delivered his perfon into the hands of them, whom be well knew to shift after his blond.

The very like did the Earle of Lefceffer with the Duke of Norjo $k$ for the a $t$ of $\begin{gathered}\text { Trail } n \text {, }\end{gathered}$ though in the parties betrayed theiewere great difference of innocency. N timely, at one ute, when her Majefty was at Baling in Haunt ire, and the Duke attended there so have audiences, with gre $t$ indifferency in himelfe to follow, or leave off his fut for marriage : ( for that now he began to fufpect, her Majefty liked not greatly thereof:) my Lord of Leyctiftr came to him and counseled him in any cafe to perfivere, and not

The freeshes of Ley setter to The Duke of Norf. to relent, affuring him with many o the and proteftations, that her M welty mut and fold be brought to allow the roof, whether il e would or no, and that bimielie would Peale th or purpure with his blood. Nailer wi 511 to be fufferedt it her Maselty floould have her will herein; with many other like fpeeches to this purpose : $w$ hitch the Duke repeated agama then prefently to my faid friend: with often laying his hand upon $1 \mathrm{~s}^{\text {th }}$ bofome and laying 3 I have here which affurethl me fufficiently of the fidelity of my Lord of Leycefier ; meaning not onely the forefaid Speeches, bur alpo divers letters which he had written to the Duke of that effect, as likewife he had done la to forme other perion of mure importance in the Reatme; which natter conaming afterward to I li h'; he coufesed molt notably her Majefty, by 3 flexing her a reformed conic of the fard Letter, for the Letter it felfe.

But now how well he performed his promife, in dealing with her Majefy for the Daks or grant

## ( $\times 49$ )

the Duke in this matter, her Highneflie can beft $\mathrm{utl}_{2}$ and the event it felfe fhewed. For the Duke being admitted foon after to her $M_{2}$ jefties fpeech it another place, and reseiving a farre other aniwer than he had in hope conceived upon Leyce- The Toke fers promifes, retyred himfelfe to London, where of Norf. the fame neght following he received Letters flyi ginto both from Leycejler, and Sir Nicbolas Throgmor- Norfolke lon,upon Leycefters infligation (for they were at that time botis friends and of a foetion) that he hould prefently llye into Norfolk, as he did, which mas the laft and finall complement of all Lycefo. former devices, whereby to plange his friend orer the eares in fufpition and difgrace, in fuch fort 35 he fhould never be able to draw himfelfe out of the ditch againe, as indeed he was not, but dyed in the fame.

And herein you fee alfo the fame fubtile and MachiviMachivilian Aight, which I mentioned before, of lian fights driving men to attempt fomewhat, whereby they may incurre danger, or remaine in perpetuall fufprion or difgrace. And this practice $h$ : hath long fed, and doth dayly, againft fuch as he hath will to deftroy. As for example, what fay you to the device he had of late, to intrap his well deferving Leycefters tiend, Sir Cbrifiopher Hatton, in the matter of Hall his Prieft, vyhom hee would have had Sir cbrifopber to fend away and hide, being touched and detected in the care of Ardent, thereby to have drawne in Sir Chriftopber himfelfe, as Sir devices for the overthrowe of sir Chriftopher Charles Candijh can well declare, if it pleafe him, Haton. being aceeflary to this plot, for the overthrow of Sir Chrifopher: To which intent, and moft denlifh drift, pertained ( I doubt not) if the matter nere duely examined, the late interception of letcrrs in paris from one Aldred of Lyone, then in

## (150)

Rome, to Henr. Umpton, Servant to Sir - hriffopber, in which leteres, sir Chriftopber is reported to be of fuch credit and fpeciall favour in Rome, as if he were the greateft Papift in England

What meaneth alfo theie pernitious late dea-

Leycelters devices againf/ the Earle of Shrewsf. bury.

Leycefters cont tupt of the ancient N obiluty of England.

Lawyer.

New men moft contemptugus lings againft the Earle of Sbrewsburte, a man of the moft ancient and worthieft Nobilitie of our Realm ? what meane the practifes with his neareft both in bed and blond againlt him? what meane thofe moft falfe and flanderous sumours caft abroad of late of his difloyall demeanours towards her Maieft and his countrey, wh the great prifoner committed to his charge? i, all this to any other end, but onely to drive him to fome impatience, and thereby to commit or fay fome thing which may open the gate unto his ruinc? Divẹrs other things could I recite of his hehaviour towards other noble men of the Realm, who live abroad in their countries much injured and malecontented by his infolency : albeit m refpect of his prefent power they dare notcemplaine. And furely, it is ftiange to fee how lit:le account he maketh of all the ancient nobilitue of our Realme : how he contemneth, derideth and debafeth them ; which is the fafhion of all fuch as mean to ufurp, to the end they may have nene who fhall not acknowledge their firft beginning and advancement from tiemfelves.

Not only ufurpers (quoth the Lawyer) but all others whorife and mount alofe from bafely. nage, be ordinarily moft contempr uous, contumal tuous, and infolent agandt others of mow antiquity And this was crident in this mans tather, who being a Buck of the Grift head (as you know) was intollerable in contempt of others : as ap. peareth by thofe whom hee trod downe of the Nubili-

## (ISI)

Nobilitie in his time : as alfo by his ordinarie jefts againft the Duke of somer $\int e t$ and others. But among other times, fitting one day at his awne table (as a Counfellor told mee thatwas prefent) he took occafion to talke of the Earl of $\mathcal{D}$. Dudlies Arundel, whom he had then not onely removed jeff at the from the Counfell, butalfo put into the Tower of London, being (as is wel known) the firt and Arundell. chiefeft Earle of the Realme. And for that the faid Earle fhewed himielfe fomewhat fad and afflited with his prefent ftate (as I marvel not, feing himfelf in prifon, and within the compafle of fo ficree a Beares paws) it pleafed this goodIy Duke to vaunt upon this Earles mifery, at his owne Table (as I have faid) and a, ked the noble men and gentlemen there prefent, what Crelt or Cognizance my L. of Arundel.did give ? and when every one anfwered, that hee gave the white horfe: I thought $\int$, (quoth the Luke) and not without great caufe; for as the white Paulfry when he ftandeth in the ftable, and is well provendred, is proud and fierce, and ready to rape on every other horfes back, ftill neying, and prauncing, and troubling all that ftand abouthim : but whenhe is once out of his hot table, and deprived a little of his eafe andfar feeding, every boy may ride and mafter him at his pleafure: fo is it (quoth he) with my Lord of Artudell. Whereat many marvelled that were prefent, to heare fo infolent fpeech paffic from a man of judgement, againtt a Pcere of the Realme caft into calamity.
But Jou would more have matvelled (quoth Gentl. whe Gentleman) if you had feene that which I did afierward, which was the molt bale and abjea behaviour of the fame Duke to the fame Earle

## (152)

The of 1 abiefll bebavicur of Duņp Duśley in adverle furtunes.

Earle of Arundel at Cambridge, and upon the way towards London: when this Earle was fent to apprehend and bring him up, as prifoner. If I fhould tell you how he fell down on bis kaees, how he wept, how he befought the faid Earle to be a good Lord unto him, whom a little before he had fo much contemned and reproached, you would have faid that himfelfe might as well be compared to this his white Paulfrey, as the other: Albeit in this I will excufe neither of eliem both, neither almolt any of thefe great men who are fo proud and infolent in thert profpeo rous fortunc, as they are eafily led to contemne any man, albeit themfelves bee moft contemprible of all others, whenfoever their fortune beginneth to change : and fo will my L. of $L e i-$ cefter be,allo no doubt at that day, though now in his wealth he triumph over al!, and carech not Sihollar, whom, or how many he offend and inpure.

Sir, therein I belceve you, quoth 1) forwee Leyceflers have had fufficient tryall already of my Lords baye bebc- fortitule in adverfity. His bafe and abject beniourin advaraf fitie. haviour in his laft difgrace about his marriage, well declared what hee would doe in a matter of more importance His fawning and flattering of them, whom he hated muft: his fervile
I.cyc fters sicceiving ofsirchrio tropher Matron. fpeeches, his feigned and diliembledreares, are all very well knowne : Then Sir Cbrifupber Hatton muft needs be enforced to receive at his hands the h nourable and great office of Chamberlainhip of Cbefter, for that he would by any meanes rel gne the fame unto him, whe- ther he would or no: and made him previde. (not without his charge) to recerve the fame, though his Lordmap never meant it, as after wel appeared. For that the prefent pange being paft,

## (153)

it liked my Lord to fulfill the Italian Proverbe; of fuch as in dangers make vowes to Saints: Scampato 1 pericolo, gabbato il fanto, the danger efcaped, the Saint is deceived.
Then, and in that neceflity, no men of the Realin were fo much honoured commended, \&
ferved by lim as the noble Chamberlaine deceafed, and the good Lord Treafurer yet living: to whom, at a certains time, he wrote a letter in all fraud and bafe difimulation, and caufed

A pretic Bift of my Lord of Leycefter. the fame to be delivered with great cunning in the fight of her Majefty ; and yet $f 0$, as to fhew a purpofe thatsit fhould not be feen : to the end, her Highneffe mightr tather take occa: :on to call for the fame and read it, as the did. For MiAris Francis Haward ( to whom the ftratagem was committed) playing her part dexteroufly, offered to deliver the fame to the Lord Treafurer, neare th: docre of the withdrawing Chamber, he then comming from her Majefty: And to draw the eye and attention of her High neffe the more untoi, fhee let fall the paper, before it touched the treafurers hand, and by that occafion brought her Majefty to call for the fame : Which after fhe had read and confidered the $f_{1} l e$ e,together with the metall and conflitution of him that wrote it, and to whom it was lent, her Highneffe could not but breake forth in laughter, with deteftation of fuch abfurd and abject diffimulation : fay ng unto my Lord Treafurer there prefent : my Lord believe him not, for if he had you in like cafe, he would play Her Maicfies /petco of Leycefter to the Tres/uri. the Beare with you, though at this preient hee Yiwne upon you never fo falt.
But now Sir, I pray you goe forward in your Ipecch of 5 cotland, tor there I remember you L left
lefe off, when by occafion we fell into thele digreffions.

Well then(quoth the Gentleman) to returne againe to Scotland (as you move) from whence wee have digreffed : molt certaine and evidentit is to all the world, that all the broyles, aroubles, and dangers procured to the Prince in that countrey, as alfo the vexations of them, who any way are thought to favour that tule in our owne Realme, doe proceed from the drift and complot of thefe confpurators. Which befides the grear dangers mentioned before, both domefticall and fortraine, temporall, and of religion,muft needs inferre grat jeopardy alfo to herMaiefties perfon and prefent reign, that now governeth, through the hope and heat of the afpircrs ambition, inflamed and increafed fo much the more by the neareneffe of theri defiv red prey.
For as foul diers entred into the hope of a rich and weil tuin thed citue, are more fierce and furious, when they have gotten and beaten downe A Similie the Bullwaiks round ab uc: and as the greedy згия. Burglarer that hath picreed and broken downe man wails to come to a tuealure, is leffe patient of flay, ftop, and delav, when he commedh in fight of that which he delireth, or perceivech $x$ a only tome partirion of wane skot or the like be $=10$ twixt his fiugers, and the cofers or monic bags: 10 fo thefe men when they fhall fee the fucceffion at of Scotland extinguikieo, together with all friends and tavour is theroof, (which now are w to her Mojefty as Bullwarks and wals, ancigreat obitacles ro the a(pirors) and when they fhative onely her Ma1 ftres life and perfon, to ftand beenthe twixt ${ }_{\text {them }}$ and their fierie defircs (for they ${ }^{\text {w }}$ make

## (155)

make little account ufall other Competitors by King $H$ : aries line:) no doubt but it will bee to them a great prick and Spurre to difpatch Her Majeftie alfo: the nature of both Earles being well conlidered, whereof the one killed his own wife, (as hath been thewed befare) onely upon

Earle of Leycefter. a hitcle vaine hope of marriage with a Queene, and the othar being fo farre plinded and borne away with the fanae furious fume, \& moft impotent itching humor of ambition, as his owne mother, when the was alive, feemed greatly to feare his fingers, if once the matter fhould come Yo neare, as her life had onely thood in his way. For which caule, the good old Counteffe was wontto pray God (as I have heard divers fay ) that fhe might dye befure her Majefly (which happily was granted unto her) to the en.l that The old by ftanding in her fonnes way (who fhe faw Counteffe to her grief, furtounly bent to weare a Crown:) of Hunthere might not fome dangerous extremity tingtons grow to her by that nearenellic: And if his owne /peech of mother feared this mifchance, whst may her bir /onne. Majeify doubt at his, \& his companions hanis, when fhe oncly fhall be the obftacle of all their wabridled and impraient de: res ?
Cleare it is (quoth the Law yet) that the neare- Lawyer. neffe of alpirors to the (rowne, endangereth Nearene/fe greatly the prefent pofil flors, as you have well in compleproved by reafon, and I could flew by divers ex- titors dath amples, if it were need. For when Henric BuL- incitethem, lingbrooke, Duke of Lancaffer, faw not onely Ri- to aivunthard the fecond to be without iffue, but alfo ture. Rogit Mortimer, Earle of March, that fhould Henr. Bulfive fucceded in the Crowne, to bee flaine in lingbrook Ireland: though before(as is thought) he meant aftir King not to ufurpe, yet feeing the poffibility and H . the 4 .

Richard
Duke of Gloucefter after K Kizg Richard the thirl.
neare cut that he had, was inuited therew ith to lay hands of his Soveraignes blorid and dignity as he did. The like is thought of Kichard, Duke of Glocefler, that he ncver meant the murther of his nephewes, untill he faw their father dead, and themfelves in his owne hands; his brother alfo Duke of Clarence difpatched, and his onely fonne and heire Eatle of Warzick within his owne power.
Wherefore feeing that it hath not pleafed A1. mighty God, for caufes to himfelfe beft knowa, to leave unto this noble Realm, any iffiue by her
Thegreat wi';cdome of her Thajeftyin conferving the next beines of Scotland. moft excellent Maieft:e, it hath been a poynt of great wifedome in mine opinion, and of great fafety to her Highnes perlon, thate, \& dignity, to preferve bitherto the line of the next Inheritors by the houle of Scotland, (I meane both the mother and the fonne) whofe deathshath been fo diligent'y fought by the other Competitors, and had beene longere this atcheved, if her Majefties owne wifedome, and royall c.emency (as is thouzht) had not placed fpeciall eye upon the confervation thereof, from rime to time. Which Princely providerice, fo long as it fhall enciure, muft needs be a great fafety and fortrefs to her Majefty, not onely againft the claimes, aides, or annoyance of forraise Princes, who wil not be fo forwaid to ad: ance ftrange titles, while fo manifett herres remana at home, nor yet fo willang (in refpect of rolicy) to lelpe that line to poff: ffion of the whole Ifland: but alfo againit prastices of domefticall a piprers (as you have fhewed) in whefeaflarrs no doubr butghele two branches of sc tland are great bocks, io alfo (peciall bulwarks to her Majelties life and perfon: feeing (as you fay) thefe copartners make

## (157)

fo little account of the other of that line, who fhould ea tue by order of fucceffion.
Marry yet of the two, I thinke: the youth of The K. of Scotland be of much more importance for their Scorlands purpofe, to bee made away, both for that hee difructicn may have iffue, and is like in time to be of more ol moreimability, for defence of his owne inhectitance: as portance to allo for that he being once drpatched, his mo- the con/pither fhould foone enfue by one fight or other, rators, then which they would devife unwitting to her Ma- bismotbers jefty: albeit, I mult needes confeffe that hice Highneffe hath ufed moft fingular prudence for preventicn thereof, inplacing her reftraint with fo noble, ftrong, and worthy a Peere of our The Earle Realme, as the Earle of Shrexshuric is, whofe of Salisbufidelity and conftancy being nothing plyable to ry dijgra* the others fation, giveth them little contenta- ced hy the tion. And for that caufe the world feeth how competimany fundry and diversdevices they have ufed, fors. and do ufe dayly to llamder and difgrace him, and thereby to pull from him his charge committed
To this the Gentleman ary 2 vered notbing at all, Gentl. but foodfill nufing with bimsclfe, as though bee had conceived fome deep matter in bis bead + and after 1 little paufe be beg an to fay as followetb
I cannot truly but nuch macvaile, when I do the vigicompare fome things of this time and govern- lant cye. ment, with the doings of formir Princes, Pro- that ber genitors to her Majelty. Namely of Henrie the Muifflies 7.2nd Henrie the 8. who had fo vigilant an eye ancifors to the laterall line of King Edmard the 4. by bad rothe his'fother of Clarence, as they thought it ne- colstersall miary, not only to prevent all evident dangers lize. that might enfue that way, but even the poffibilities of all perill : as may well appeai by the execution of $E d$. Earl of $W$ armick before named

Son and heire to the faid Duke of claremce, and of Ma, ga. ef hits Gifter Counteffe of Salisbury, with the Lord Heny Montague her fonne, by whole Dauititer the Earle of Huntington now
perjons executed of the bufe of $\mathrm{Clasex}_{\text {ce }}$ claimeth. All which were execured for avoyding of inconveniencies, and that at fuch times, when no imminest danger could be much doubted by that Line, efpecially ty the latter. And yer now when one of the faime houfe and Line, of more ability and ambition, than ever any of his Anceltors were, malieth opentisle and clame to the Crowne, with plots, packs, an.| preparations to moft manifeft ufurpition, againft all order, all law, and all righetull lucceffion, and againft a fpecial ftatute provided in that behalfe: yet is he permitted, bone our, favoured, and friended therein: and no man fo hardy, as in defence of her Majeftie and the Realme to con tr le him for the fame.
The cx :3mple of Iuli. us Cæ•ars . defruction.

It may be that her Majeftie is broughe into the fame opinion of my Lord of Huxirgton: fidelity, as Iulius Cafar was of Marcus Brurus, his dearef obliged friend: of whote ambitious praEtifes,and alpiring, when cafar was advertifed by his carefull friends; he an wered, that hee well knew 'Brutus to be ambitious, but I ain fure (quoth he that my Brutu will never attempt any thing for the Empire while cafar liveth: and after my death let him fhift for the fame among o: hers, a; he can. But what enfued? surely I am loath to tell the event lor oninat. ons fake, but yet all the world knoweth "hat cre many moncths paff d , this molt noble antio C lement Emperour was pitufully murthered $y$ the fame Brutus and his partneis in the pubtique Senate, when leat of all he expected fuch

## (159)

fuch treafon. So dangerous a thing it is to be fecure in a matter of fo great fequell, or to truß them with a mans life, who mayp etend preferment or intereft by his death.
Wherefore, would God her Majeftie in this cafe might be induced to have fuch due care and regard of her own eftate and royall perfon, as the weighty moment of the matter requireth: which containeth the bliffe and calamaty of fo noble and worthy a kingdome as this.
I know right well, that moft excellent natures Tos much are alwayes furtheft off from diffidence in fuch people as proves love, and are moft bounden by dutie : and fo it is evident in her Maieflic. But yet furely, this confidence fo commendable in other men, is fearce allowable oftentimes in the perfon of a Prince : for that it goeth aceompanyed with fogreat perill, as is inevit.able to him that will not furpect principally when dangers are foretold or prefaged, (as commonly by Gods appoyntment they are, fcr the fpeciall hand he holdech over Princes affaires ) or when there is probable conjefture, or just furmife of the fanse.

We know that the forenamed Emperor $C_{Q} / a r$, had not onely the warning given him of the inclination and intent of Brutus to ufurpation, bur even the very day when hee was going towards the place of his appoynted deftiny, there was given up into his hands 2 detection of the whole treafon, with requeft to read the fame prefently, which he upon confidence omitted to doe. Wee read alfo of Alexayder the great, how hee was not onely forbidden by a learned man to enter into Babylon (whither he was then going) for that there was treafon meant againR him in the place, but alfo that he wass foretold of Antipaters mif-
chievous meaning agonil himin partcular. But the yong Prince $h$ ving fo well dy Ferverd of Antipatcr, could not be broughte to mift uft theisan that was fo deare unto hin : ant by that meants was poyfoned in a bancun $t$ by thece ion sot Antipater, whach were of molt credt and con mieme in the Kings Chamber.
Here, truly, my healt dhd fom what the the whit feare,hontors, ind deteltation it lial creis and I faid unto the Gonticman: I bucedi you sis, in talke no more of thole matters; for I cann itived abide to heare them na and: himmont in and that there is no caufr, nor wer t liall $\mathrm{b}^{-} \mathrm{t}$ ) douls the like in Eigland: cipecially from licicma,

Late exe= cutions. who are fo much bound so her $\mathrm{M}_{2}$ jo fly, and fo forward in feeking out, and purluing ail fuch as may be thought to be dangerous to her Majeitics perfon, as by the fundiy late exceutions wee have have feen, and by the punithments evely way of Papifts we may perceive.

Truth it is (quoth the Gendem n) rliat puitice hath bin done upon divers of late, whell whternteth megreatly, for the terrour and reftraint of others, of woh ut feet or religion foever they be: And it is moft necelfity (doutiles) for the compreffing of partics, thar gre $t$ vigulance be ufed in that behalfe. But when i contider, that only one kend of men are touched herem : and that all ipcech,regard, doubr, diftrult, ind watch ss of them alone ${ }_{3}$ withour refletton of eye upha other mens doing ${ }^{3}$ or defignements: whien I fee the deuble d ligence and vehemency of cerraine inftruments, which I like not, bent wholly to taife wonder and aderife tion of the people feare, terrour, and atteitien to the doings, fayimgs, and meanings fone part or faetoon alone, and of that ndinely and only whith thefe

## (16I)

thefe confpirators efteem for moft dangerous and Fraud to oppofite to themiclves: I a:n (belecve me) often be feared tempted to furpect fraud and falfemeafure : and in purfuivg that thefe men deale, as wolves by tazture in other one part or Countries are wont to do: Which going together fagion or in great numbers to affaile a flocke of theep by $t y$. night, doe fet fome one or two of their company The comupon the wind fide of the fold a far off, who pare pari/on of ly by their fent and ober bruteling, which of pur- Wolves pofe they make, may draw the dogs and hep-andrebels. heards to purfue them alone, whiles the other doe enter and flay the whole flock. Or as rebels that meaning to furprize a Town, to turne away the Inhabitants from confidering of the danger, and from defence of that place, where they intend to enter, doe fet on fire fome other parts of the Towne further off, and doe found a falfe alarme at fome gate, where is meant leaft danger.

Which art was ufed cunningly by Richard D. Richard of Yorke in the time of King Henrie the fixt, Duke of when he to cover his owne intent, brought all the rorke. Realme in doubt of the doings of Edmond Duke of Somerfet, his enemy. But Iobn of Northamber-D. Dudly. tand, father to my Lord of Lejcefler, ufed the fame art much moreskilfully, when hee put all England in a maze and mufing of the Protector, and of his friends: as though nothing could be fafe about the yong King, untill they were fuppreffed: and confequently, all brought into his owne authority, without obitacle. I ppeake not Agoodrtile this to excule Papifts, or to wifh them any way of policy. fpared wherein they offend : but onely to fignifie that In a Countrey, where fo potent fattions bee, -is not fafe, to fuffer the one to make it felfe fo puiffant by purfuit of the other : as afterwards the Prince mult remaine at the devotion of the

## (162)

fironger: but rather as in a body molefted and troubled with contraric humours, if all cannor be purged, the beft Phyfick is wirhout all doubt to reduce and hold them at fuch an equality, as defirction may not be feared of the predominant,
To this faid the Lavoyer laughing, yea marry Sir, I woold to God your opinimumght preraile in this matter; for then fhould wee bee in other tearmes then now we are. I was, not long fince, in company of a cerame honourable Lady of the Court, who, after fome ipecch pafled by Gentlemen that were prefent, of fome apprehended, and fomc executed, and fuch like aff iires, brake into a great complaint of the prefent time, and therewith (I affure you)moved all the hearers to griefe (as woomen you know are potent in Itirring of affections) and caufed them all to wifh that her Majefly had beene nigh to have heard her words I doe well remember (quoth the) the fift do of a cersain fen yeares of her Highnelle reigne, how happy, Lady of the pleafant and quict they were, with all manner of Court. comfort and confolation. There was no mention then of fations in religion, neither was any man much noted or rejected for that caule: fo other. wife his converfation were civill and controous, No fufpition of treafon, no talke of bloudthed, no complant of troubles, miferies, or vexations, All was peace, all was love, all was joy, all was delight. Her M 'jeffie ( $I$ am (ure) took more Re- ${ }^{\text {T }}$ creation at that time in one day, than meedoth now in a whole week: and wee that ferved her Highneffe, enjoyed more contentasion in a weeke, than we can now in divers yeares. For now blere are fo many fufpitions cvery where, for this thint, and for that, as we cannot tell whom to truft So many melancholick in the Cours, that feem male-

## (163)

contented, fo many complayning or fuing for that friends that are in trouble: others flip over the Sea, or retite themfelves upon the fuddaine : fo many tales brought us of this or that danger ${ }_{3}$ of this man fufpected, of that manfent for up, and fuch like unpleafant, and unfavorie fulfe; as we can never almoft bee nerry one whole day together.
Wherefore (quoth this Lady) wee that are of her Majefties traine and feeciall fervice, and doe not onely feele thefe things in our felves, but much more in the grief of her moft excellent Majefty whom we fee dayly molefted herewwith (being one of the beft natares, I am fure, that ever noble Princeffe was mdued withall:) wee cannot but mone, to behold contentions advanced fo far forth as they are: and we could wifh moft heartily that for the time to come thefe matters might paffe with fuch peace, friendfhip, and tranquillity, as they doe in other Countryes, where difference

More mo~ deration wifhed in matrers of faction. in religion breaketh not the band of good fellowfhip, or fidelity. And with this in a moling manner fhe brake off, asking pardon of the company, if fhe had fpoken her opinion over boldly, like a woman.

To whom anfwered a Courtier that fate next The fpeech her : Madame, your Ladifhip hath faid nothing in of Coura this behalfe, that is not dayly debated amongtt tier. us, in our common fpeech in Court as you know. Yofr defire allo herein is a publick defire, if it might be brought to paffe : for there is no man fo fisple, that feeth not how perilous thefe conChifions and divifions among u3 may bee in the end. And I have heard divers Gentlemen that be learned, difcourfe at large upon this argument: alleaging old examples of the Atbenitns, Lace-

## (164)

rbe perill demonians, Carthigenians, and Romans, who reof divifions ceived notable dammages, and deftruction alio in 60 factions the end, by their divirions and fictions among in a Com themfelves, and fpecially from them of therr own menmealth Cities and Countries, who upon fattons lived abroad wwith Forrainers: and thereby were alvays as firc-brands, to carry home the flatue of Warre upan their Courserey.

The like they alfo fhewod by the Ing experience of all the great (itues and States of Iealywhich by thcir factions and forucites, were in contunaall gar boyle, bloud-fled and miferie. Whereof our owne countrey hath alfo tafted hee part, by the odious contention between the houfes of Lancoffer and rorke : wherem it is marvaslons to confider, what trouble a few men ofientimes, departing our of the Realme, wvere able to worke by the part of their fyetion remaining at home ( whlich commonly encreafeth tuward them that are abfent) \& by the readines of for ain Prances, to receive alowayes, and comfort fuch as are difcontented in another flate: to the end, that by their meanes, they might hold an Ore in ther neighbours boat : Which Princos that are nigh borderers, doe alwayes above all other things moft covet and defire.

The dangeo rous fequel of difention in our Realme.:

This was that Courtiers fpecch and reafon, whereby 1 perceired, that afwell among thein in Court, as among us in the Rcalme and Coun'ry abroad, the picent inconvenience and dangetous fequell of this our home dilfention, is efpyed, and confequenty molt Englifh hearts inclined ta wifh the remedy or prevention thereof, by fomes. fonable moderation, or re-union amoug onr telves. Fre that the profecution of thefic differince; to exisemitic, cinatot but afcer many wounds

## (165)

and exulcerations bring matters finally to rage, fury , and moft deadly def(peration.
Whereas on the other Gide, if any fweet' qualification, or fmall tolleration among us were admitted : there is no doubr, but that affaires would paffic in our Realme with more quietneffe, (afety and publike weale of the fame, then it is like it will doe long : and men would eafily be brought, that have Englifh bowells, to joyne in the prefervation'of their Countrey from ruine, bloudfhed, and forraine oppreffion, which defparation of factions is wont to procure.
I am of your opinion (quoth the Gentleman) in that, for I have feene the experience thereof, and all the world beholdeth the fame at this day, in all the Countries of Germanie, Polonia, Berm- Exsmples : land, and Hungarie : where a lietle bearing of of tollerathe one with the other, hath wrought them much tion in mat eafe, and continued them a peace, whereof all Eu ters of relirope befides hath admiration and envie. The firt gion. 12 years alfo of her Majefties reign, whereof your Lady of the Court difcourfed of before, can well bee a witneffe of the fame : wherein the commiferation and lenity that was uled towvards thofe of the wesker fort, with a certaine fweet diligence for their gaining, by good means was the caufe of much peace, contentation, and other beacfit to the whole body.
Wee fee in France, that by over much preffing of one part onely, a fice was inkindled not mafy yeares fince, like to have confumed and deftroyed the whole : had not a neceffiry mollificzion been thought upon by the wifelt of that Kings Councell full contrary to the will and inclination of fome great perionages, who meant perhaps to have gained more by the other:

The breech or rinnion agais in France.

## (166)

and fince that time we fee what peace, wealth, and re-union hath enfued in that Countiy that was fo broken, diffevered, and wafted before. And all this, by yeelding a litte e in that thing, which no force can mafter, but exulcerate rather, and make worle : I meane the confcience and judgement of men in matters of Religion.

The like alfo I could name you in Flanders, where after all thefe broyles and miferies of fo many yeares warres (caufed princifally by too much ftreyning in fuch affares at the begunning) albeit the King bee never fo ftriet laced, in yeelding to publike libeity, and free exercife on both parts : yet is be defcended to this at length (and that upon force of realon) to abftaine from the purfuit and fearch of mens confciences, not only in the townes, which upon compolition hee recerveth, but alfo where he hath recuvered by force, as in Torney, and other places:wherc I am intormed that no man is fearched, demanded, or molelted for his opinion or confcience, nor any aft of Papiftry or contrary religion required at their hands, but are permitted to live quetly to God and chemfelves, at home in their ovwne houles. (o they performe othervife their outward obedience and duties to their Prince and Countrey. Which only qualification, tollerance, and moderation in our Realme (if I bee not deceived, with many more that be of my opinion) would content all divil:ons, factions, and parties among us, for their continuance in peace : bee they Papifts, Puritens, Familians: or of whateever nice difference or fection befides, and would be fufficient to reme all parties within a temperate obedience to the Magiftrate and government, for confervation of their Countrey : which were of no fmall impor-

But what fhould I talke of this thing which is Moderathfo contrary to the defires and defignements of our on impug puilfant Confpirators ? What flould Cicero the ned by the Senator ufe perfwafions to Captaine Cateline, and conn/pirco. his crevs, that quietneffie and order were better Cicero. than hurliburlies? Is it poffible that our a apirors Cateline. will ever permit any fuch thing, caufe, or matter, to be treated in our flate, as may tend to the ftability of her Majefties prefent government ? No farely, it flandeth nothing with their wifedome orpolicy, efpecially at this inftant, when they have fuch opportunity of following their ovvne attions in Her Majefties name, under the vizard and pretext of her defence and rafety : having fowed in every mans head fo many imaginations of the dangers prefent both abroad and at home : from Scotland, Flanders, Spaine, and Ireland : fo man confpiracies, fo many artended murthers, and others fo many conerived or conscived milchiefes: as my Lord of Leiceffer alfureth himélfe tinat the troubled water cannot be cleared agane in flort fpace, nor his baits and lines laid thercin, eafily efpyed: but rather, that hereby, ere long, he will catch the fifh he gapeth fo greedily after: and in the meane time, for the purfuit of thefe crimes, and other that he dayly will finde out, himfelfe mult remaine perpetuall Dietator.
Sut what meaneth this fo much inculcating of - troubles, treafons, murthers, and inva fions? I like not furely thefe ominous fpeeches. And as I zuriout of doubr, that Leicefer the cafter of thefe fhadowes, doth look to play his part firft in thele troublefome affaires : fo doc 1 heartily feare, that unleffe

## (168)

unlefle the tyranny of this Leiceflian fury bee speedily fopped, that futh miferte th P ince and people (which the Lord for his merues fake turne from us) as never greater fell betoicio our miderable Countrey, is far neare hand tif an is expected or fufpected.

And therefore for the prevention of flaefecala-
Leycefter to be called to account. mities, to tell you plamly mine opinon (b d Sirs) and therewith todraw to in end of this oir conference (for it waxeth late.) I twould thanke it the moft neceffarie poynt of all for her Majefly to call his Lordfhip to account among other, and to fee what other men could fay againft him, at length, after fom any yeates of his fole a cufing; and purfuing of ot hers. 1 know, and am very well affured, that no one at which her Majeftie hath doae fince her comming to the Crowne (as flite hath done right many moft highly to be commended) nor any that lightly her Majefty may doe hereafter, can be of more uility to Her felfe, and to the Realme, or, more griefull to lita fanthfull lend zealous fubjects than his moble att of Iutitie would be, for trya!l of this mans deferts towards lus Countrey.

I fay it would be profit able to her Majefty, and to the Realnue, not onely in refpett of the many dangers before mentioned, hercby to be avoyded, which are like to enfue mof certainly, it his courfes bee ftill permitted: but alfo for that her Majefty fhall bythis, detver Her felfer frem that generall gradge and grict: of mind, with great cor like, which many fubiects, otherwife moft fathfull, have conceived againit the excefsive finour thewed to this man fo many yeares, whthout de? fert or reafon. Which favour he haring ufed to the hurt, annoyance, and oppicflion borlh of infinite
fercall

## (169)

feverall perfons, and the whole common-weal:h (as hath bin faid:) the griefe and refentment. thereof, doth redound commonly infuch cafes not only upon the perfon delinquent alone, but alfo upon the Soveraigne, by whofe favour \& authority he offers fuch iniuries, though never fo muchag ainft the others intet, d: fire or meaning.
And hereof we have examples of fundry Prinres, in all ages and Countrics, whofe exorbitanr favour to fome wicked fubicet that abufed the rame, haih bin the caufe of great dinger and ruine; the fins of the favourte being returned and revenged upon the favourcr. As in the Hiftorie of the Grecians is dectared, by occafion of the pittifull murther of that wife and victorious P. Philip of Macedors, who alberr, that he were The deatb well aflured to have given no offence of himfelf «C Philip to any of his lubieits, \& confequently feared no- of Onacething, but converfed openly and confidently a- donie,and mong them : yet, for that hee had favoured too caule there much one Luke dttalus, a proud and infolent of. Courter, and had born him out in certain of his wickednes, or at Icaft not puniflaed the fame after it was detected and coa. plained upon: the parties grieved accounting the crime more propert' and heinous on the part of him, who by office fhould do iuftice, \& proteit other, than of the perperrator, who followeth his own paffion and fenfuality, let pafs Attelus, \& made their rerenge upon the bloud \& life of the K himeelf, by gac Paufanias, Cuborned for that purpofe, in Paufanias. te marriage day of the Kings owne daughter.
Great fore of like examples may be repeated, ark of the fories of other countries, nothing bcing more ufuall or frequent ameng all nations, than the afflictions of realms and kingdoms, and

## ( 170 )

the overthrow of Princes and great Potentates themfelves, by therr too much affection townrds fome unworthy particular perfons : a thing in deed in common and ordinary, as lt may well feem to be the fpectall Rock of all other, whereat Kings \& Prunces doe make therr flupwiacks.

For if we look into the ftates and Monarchies all Chriftendone, and confider the rumes that have bin of any Princes or Ruler withen the fame: we fhall find this poynt to have bin a great and principall part of the caufe theroof-

Kings of Eighando. wertorcum by 200 much favouring of fome particular \%8cn.
K.Edw. 2 and in our owne flate and countrey, the matter is too evident. For whereas fince the Conguef? we number principally, three jult and lawfull Kings, to have come to con ufion, by alienation of their fubjects : that is, Edward the fecond, $R^{i} c k$, the fecond, and Henric the fixe : this only point of too much favour towards wicked perCons, was the chiefeft caufe of deftruetion in all three. As in the firt, the exceflive favour to. wards Peter Gavefton, and two of the SpenversIn the fecond, the like extriordinarie, and anditt ${ }^{1}$ creet affection towards Robert Vere, Lurle of
XRich.2. Ox ford, and Marqueffe of Dublin, and Tbomas Mowobray, two moff turbulent and wicked men, t lat set the K. againft his own n ncles \& the ncown bility. "In the third (being a fimple and holy ald
K. Hienro6. man) albeit no great evorbitant affeetion was ? feene towards any, yet his wife Queen Marga-tish rets too much favour and ereds (by him notim controled, tow utds the Marqueffe of Suff Ike, that aftel was made Duke, by whofe inftin.f? and wicked Counfell, fie made away filt the 3 noble Duke of Gloucrfter, and afterward commer mitted orher things in great prejudice of the in tealme, and luffered the faid moft imptous and at:

## (171)

finfull Duke to range and make havock of all fort of fubjects at his pleafure (much afeer the faikion of the Earle of Leicefter now, though yet not in fo high anitextreame a degree: (this I fay was the principall and originall cauff, both before Gou and man, (as Polidore well noteth) of all the calamity and extreme defolation, po.l:ib. 23 hif. Angl. which afier enfued both to the King, Queene, and their oncly child, with the utter extirpation of the if family,

And fo likewile now to fealk in our particular cale, if there be any grudge or grefe at this day, any multke, repining, complaint or maurmure againit her Majefties gevernment, in the hearts of her true and faithfull fubjeits, who wifh amendment of that which is amiffe, and not the overthrow of that which is well : ( as I trow it were no wifedome to imagine there were none at all :) I dare avouch upon Confcience, that ether all, or the greatelf part thereof, proceedeth from this man; who by the favor of her Majefly fo afflictect her peo ${ }_{f}$ le as neverdid before him, eitherGaveffon, spercer,, Vere, orOMowbray or any other milchievous tirant, that abufed molt his Princes favour within our Realme of $E$ igland. Whereby it is evident how profitable a thing it flonla bee to the whole Realre, how homourable to her Mije $y$, and how gratefull to all her fubjects, if this man at lepgth might be called to his account.

Si (quoth the $\mathrm{L}_{3}$ wer ) you alleage great rea- Lawyer. fon, and verily I am of opinion, that if her MaIffly knew but the ten.h part of this, which you have here fpo en, 28 alfo her good fubjects defires and complaint in this behalfe : the would well fhew, that her Highncfle feareth not to
permit iuftice to paffeupon Leiceffer, or any other within her Realme, for fatisfaftion of her people, whatfoever fome men may think and report to the contrary, or howlocver otherwil of her owne milde difpofition towards the perfon, fhe have borne wath him hitherto. For fo we fee that wife Princes can doe at times convenient, for peace and tranquillity, and publike weale : though contrary to their uwne particular and peculiar inclination.

As to goe no furiber then to the laft example named and alleaged by your felfe beforethough

The p! niffmeri of M就liam Duke of Sn foolk. Queen Margaret the wife of K Hewric the firt, had favoured moft anfortunately many yeares together, W. ll am Duke of Sufolk (as hath bin faid) whereby he committed mani fold outrages, and afflected the Realme by fundry meanes : yet the being a woman of great prudence, when the faw the whole Communalty demand juftice up= on him for his demerits, albeit the liked and loved the man ftill : yet for fatisfaction of the people, upon fo generall a complaint, fhee was content firft to commit him to prifon, and afterward to banifh him the Realme : but the providence of God would not permit him foto efcape: for that he being incountred and taken upon the fea in his paffage, he was beheaded in the fhip, and fo received fome part of condigne punifhment for his moft wacked, loofe, and licentious life.

And to feeke no more examples in this ${ }^{\prime} r_{s}$, \% we know into what favour and fpecia'l gıace Sir Edmond Dudley, my Lord of Lcycefiers good Grandfather wascrept, with King Herry the feventh, in the latter end of his reigue: and what intollerable wickednefle and mifchiefe he

## (누)

wrought againft the whole Realme, and againft infinite particular perfons of the fame, by the polings and oppreffions which hee prattifed: wherby though the King received great temporall commodity at that time, (as her Majefly The punifb doth nothing at all by the prefent extortions of ment of bis Nephew:) yet for juftice fake, and for meere Edmond compaffion towards his afflited fubietts, that Dudleycomplained grievoufly of thas iniquity: that moft vertuous and wife Prince King Henrie was content to put from him this lewd inltrument, and devillith fuggettor of new exactions: wham his fonne Henrie that enfued in the Crown, caufed prefently before all other bufines, to be called publickly to account, and for his deferts to leefe his head: So as where the intereft of a whole Realme, or common caufe of many, taketh place : the private favour of any one cannot ftay a wife \& godly Prince, (fuch as al the world knoweth her Maielly to be, fr m permitting iuftice to have her free palflage.
Truely it fhould not (quoth the Gentleman) for to that end were Princes firfteletted, and upon that confideration doe fubie ets both pay them tribute and obedience; to bee defended by them from iniuries and oppreffions, and to fee law es evecuted, and iuftice exercifed, upon and towards all men with indifferency And as for our particulat cafe of ny .Lord of Leyceffer, d doe not fee in right andequity how her Maiefty may deny this lawfull delire and petirion of her people. For if herhighneffe doe permit and command the Lawes dayly to pafie ap. on thieves and murderess without exception, and that fur one fate onely, as by experience we fee ; how then can it be deazed in this man,

## (174)

who in both kinds hath commited more enosmous acts, then may be well recounted.
Leycefters As in the firft, of theft, not ouely by 'poyl/ng and oppreffing al mof infinte private men but alfo whole Towns, Villages, Corperations, and Countries, by robbing the Realine with thoidinate licences, by decetving the Crown with tace king,changing and imb. zeling than Lants, by a buing his Prince atd Soveragnac in delling bins favour boih at hume anda aroad s with taking bribes tor matter of juftice, grace, requeft, fup plication, or whatfoever fute elfe may depend up. on the Court,or of the Princ.s suthority: with fe ting at fale, and making open warker of whisSoever her M . jcity can give, doe, or procure, be is (pirituall or temp rall. in which fort of traffictr he committ th more thefe itt numes the ene day than all the way-keeperi,cut-puffes, couleners, pirater, burglares, or other of that ats in a whule yeare, within the Realme
Leyenfirs
And as for the fecond which is murther, bou murtbers. have heard before fomewhat fadd and pruved but yet nothing to that which is rhoughe to have bin in fecret commatted upon divers occafions at divers tumes, in fundry perfon', of dilferent colling in both fexes, by moft variable incans of kllling, poyfoning, chariming, inchanting, conjuring, and the like, according to the diverfity of men, places, opportunities, and inftruments for the ame. By all which meanes, I thank he hath more bloud ying upon his head at this day, crying vengeance aganft him at Gods hands, her Majefty, than ever had private man in our Country efire, were henever fo widked.

Wheren now if me adde bis oll cr good beha-

kirds
kind and manwer of carnality, with all fort of $A$ beap of Wives, Friends, and रinferwomen: if roce add bis Leycefters. iniuries aod difhonours, done bereby to infinite: if enormitics we adde bis trea fons, treacheries, and sonf piracies that would about the Cromine; bis difloyall bebaviour, and ba. be ready at tred againft ber Majefty, bis ordinarie lying, and the diy of common perjuring bimfelfe in all matters for bis his triak. gain, both great and fmal; bis rapes and moft $v^{i} o-$ lent extortions upon the poore; bis abufing of the Parliament and other places of juftice, woutb the Nobility and wo bole Communaliy ocfides; if we add alfo bis open injuries wobich bee offereth duly to Religion, and the Minifter: tbercof, by tutbing tbem, and turning all to bis onne gaine; toget ber witt bis maxifeft and known tyranny practifed $10-$ wards all eftates abroad, tbrou bout all shires of the kengdome; bis difpoyting of both the Univerfitics, and $d$ couraging of infinite notablc wits there, from leeking perfeation of knowleage and learning, (wobich o bermife mere like to become notable) espectally in Godsword ( wich siveth life unto the foule, ) by defrauding them of the price and rewo ard propofed for their trav atil in that hind, through bis infatiable Simoniacall contracts: if ? fay, we fhould lay togetber all the fc enormities bcfore ber Majcfty, and thoufards more in particular, opobich might and rould be gathered, if bis dicy of bis triall were but in bope to be gramted. 1 do not fee in equity and reafon, bono ber Highneffc fort rg in rbrone, and at the royall ferme, as fhee dorh, could denie ber subiects tbis moft lawfult requcft; corfidering, thatevery one of th $/ \mathrm{fe}$ crimes apart, requiretb juft. ce of bis orone Nature; and nauch - moreall togetber ou ght toobtaine tbe fitme, at the bards of any good and godly Magifirate in the World.

## $(176)$

Schollar.
Her Shaiefies tender beart tcros ards the seamar.

No doubt (quoth I' bur that the fe confidera* tions muft needs weigh much with any zealous Prince and much more w ith her moft excellent Majelty whofe tender heart towards her Reatm and Subjects, is very well kno $n$ of all men. If is not to be thought alfo but that her Highnell. hath intelligence of divers of hefematters alleaged, though not derhaps of all. But what would you have her Mijefty to doc?perthaps the confultation of this affare, is not, what were convenient, but what is expedient : not, what ought to bee done in puftic, but what may bee done in fafety. Ycu have deferibed my Lord before to be a great man, itrongly furnifhed and fortified for a l events. What if it be not fectire to bark at the Bear that is fo whl britched? I fpeak unto y"u, but that which I heare in Cianit dge and other places where I have paffed: where e very mans opinion is, that her Mijelly ftandett not in free choyfe to doe what her telfe beft 1keth in that cafe, at this day.
Gentl. I know' faid the Gentlemain) that Leceffers Leycelt rs friends give to out ever; where that her Maseffy di fire that now, is their good Lords prifoner, and thate thee men Joould either will or mut! be directed by him for the thrike leer time to come, except the will do worfe: Which Asieffys, thing his Loidflip is well contented thould bee 10 Jtand in fpread abroad, and believed for two caules : the feare of one to hold the people the eby more in awe of him. himfelf, than of their :overaign : and lecondly to draw ber Majelty indeed by degrees to fear hime. For confidering with hamelfe what hee hath done : and that it is imp. fible in truth that ever her Majefty fhould love him again, or thult him* a.ter fomany treachetice as he well hnoweth are some to her Highats underitanding he thinketh
that he hath no way of fure ftanding, but by terror and opinion of his puiff: $n$ : greatneilic; wviserby he would hold her Majefly and the Realine in thraldome, as his father did in his time befo e him. And then, for that he wel remembreth the ene faying, Malus cufor diuturnitatis, metus: he mut provide Cicero is fhortly, that thofe which feare him, be not able to Officio. hurt him: and confequently you know what muft follow, by the example of $\mathrm{K}, E d$ warrd, who feared Duke Dudley extreanly for that he had cut off his $\mathcal{A}$ rule of two Vncles heads; and the Duke took order Kacbivelf that he fhould never live to revenge the fame For ob/erved by it is a \{etied rule of Machiavel, which the Dudies theDudlies doc obferve : That.zober you bave ox ce done a great injury, there mulft you never forgive.
But I will tell you (my friends) and I nill tell Leycefer ycu no ú ruth, for that I know what I fpeak here- $\boldsymbol{\beta}_{\text {rong onely }}$ in, and am privie to the ftate of my Lord in this by ber Ma* behalfe, and of mens opinions and affetions to- iefies fowards hum within the Realme.Moft certaine it is, vour. that hee is ftrong by the prefent favour of the Prince (as hath bin fhewed before) in reípect wherof, he is idmitted aifo as chief patron of the $H$ w 2 tington ia ation, though neither loved, nor greatly truited of the fame : bur let her Majefly once turn her counten.ince afide from him in good earnett, and freak but the word only, that iu, ficie Shall take place azainft him ; ind I will undertake with gaging of both my life and little lands thatGod hath given me, that without fur or troubl:, or any danger in the world, the Beare fhall be taken to her Majefties hand, and faft chained to a ftake, with $\Delta n$ offer mouzell,cord,collar, and ring, and all other things made for neceffiry : fo that her Majefty fhal b thim at her taking and pleafure, without all danger of byung, breaking tying the loofe, or any other inconvenience wy hatfoever. Beaze.

## $(178)$

For (Sirs) you mult not thmk, that thi man hul= deth any thing abroad in the Realene but by violence, and tinat onely upon her Majeffies favour and councenance towards him. He tiach n't aliy thing of his owne, either frum his rtite flord, th of himfelfe, to ftay upon, in mens hears or cunceits: he hath not ancient N billty, as nther of our realm have, wheiby meas affedtons are gie:

Leice? t
wobat bet secciveth frow bis caseffors.

The compati'on of Leycetter inthbis jarber. ly moved. His farher Fohn Dudtey was the tirft noble of his line; who ranfed and made himfelfe big by fupplanting oforher, and by letting dubac among the Nobilise as alfo his prandrathr Eumond, a moft wicked l'romoter, and wret hed l'e tifogger, enriched himlelfe by other mens rwoll : both of them condemned Traitors, though diffe rent in quality, the one being a coulener, and the other a tyrant, and both of theri vices cor). ynect, colleated; and comprifed (with many mere aild toons) in this man (or beaft rather) wheh is Rysert, the third of their kin and kind. So that from his anceftors, this Lord recerveth neithe hortr ur nor honefly, but onely faccethon of the $1=1$ in infanly.
And yer in himfelfe hath he much leffe of $g$ - $d_{1}$ wherewith to procure himfelfe love or create among men, than the fe anceftors of his had 3 her being a man wholy abandoned of hum-ne verutes, and devored to wickednes, which maketh men rdible both to God and man. In his father ( 10 doubt) there were to be feen many excelle it good parts, if they had been joyned with faich, honefly, moderation and loyalty. For all the we rld knowa that he vaas very wale, valiant, mi gnanimous, libirall, and affured friendly where he once promiten of all which vertues my loord his fon herthen ther inew nor fhadow, but onely a zertaine filis
reprefentation of the firtt, being craftie and fubtile to deceive, and ingernious to wicksdneffe. For as for valour, he hath as muchas hath a moufe: his m agnanimity is bafe fordidity : his liberality rapine: his friendfh'p plhine fraud, holdiag onely for his gaine, and no otherwife, though it were bound with a thouland oaches; of which he makech as great account, as hens doe of cackling, but onely for his cormodity : ufing them feecially and in gryateft number, when moft he meaneth to decerve, Namely, if he fiveare folemnly by his George, or by the cternall God, then be fure it is a falle lye:for thefe are obferrations in the Courc: and fo:netimes in his owne lodging ; in like care his mannec is to take up and fweare by the Bible, whereby a Genileman of good account, and one that feemeth to follow him, (as many do that like him but a litele) protefted to me of his knowledge, that in a very fhort fpace, bee obierved hins wittingly and willingly to be forlworn fixteen times.
This man therefore fo contempribie by his anceifors, fo odible of himfelfe, fo piunged, overwhel.ned and de famed in ail vice,fo envyed in the Court, fo detelted in the Country, and nor trufted of his owne and deareft friends; nay (which I am privie to) fo mifliked and bated of his owne fervants about him, for his beaftly life, nigardy, and Athifine (being never feene yet ro fay one private prayer within his chamber in his life) as they defire nothing in this world fo much as his ruine, and that they may be the firft, to lay hands upon him for revenge. I his man (I fay)fo broken both within \& without, is it poffible that her Magefty end her wife Councell fhould feare ? I can never believe it, or if it be fo, it is Gods permiffion withoxt all saufe, for punifhment of our fins: for that

## (180)

that this man, if fie once perceire indeed that they feare him, will handle them accordingly, and play the Beare indeed: which inconveruence I hape shey woill have care to prevent, and fi- $1 l_{\text {laveicto }}$ God, and them, craving pardan of thy Laril of Leiceffer for my boldnes, it I have b en roo ploin with him. And fo I pray you let us goe to tuper, for I fee my feruant expecting yonder at the Gil lery doore to call us downe

Lawyer. The end and deparsure from the Gallerik.

To that, faid the L ivweer, I am content with ill my heart; and I would it had beencto mes, fin that I am afrald, leit any by chance h ve or iheard us here fince night. For my owne piri, I muft fay, that I have not been at fuch ac inference this feven years, nor meane to bechereatiens, if I may efcape well with this; whereot I ann fure I thall dreame this fortnight, and thir be ofters of my Lord of Leicefler, than ever I had intended: God amend him and me both. But if iver 1 heare at other hands of thefe matters hereafer, I hall furely be qualke britch, and thinke every t inf it theefe. And with that, came up tic Mitlis of tie houfe to fecch us down to fupper, and fin all was hufht, faving that at fupper a geateman or Isvo began again to fpeak of my Lord, and thit foconformable to fome of our former fpeestr (us indeed it is the common talke at tables (very wheic) that the old Lawyer began to fhrink and be appaled, and to enft dry looks upon the Gentleman out friend, doubring leff fomething h id been difoovered of our conterence. But indeed st was not to.

## (18i)



## Pia et utilis Meditatio, defumpta

 cx librolobi, Cap, 20.Foc fcio a principio, ex quo po fitus eft bomo fuper terram, quod laus inpiorum brevis fit, it gaudium bypocrite ad inflat purfiti. si a/cenderit ufǵz ad scelum fuperbia ejus, et caput ejus subes tetigerit : quafiferquilinium in fine perdetur, et qui cum viderent, dicent ubi eff?velut fomnium avolans non iavenietur, tranfiet focut vifsonodurna.Oculus qui cum viderat, non videbit, neq; ultro intuebitur cum locus/uus. Filii eius atterentur egefate, (r manus illius reddent et labore $m$ fum . Of a eius implebuntur vitiis \&dolefrcentice ejus, $\mathcal{O N}^{\text {com }}$ cum in pulvere dornsient. Panis cius in utero illius vertetur in frb a/pidum inerinfecus. Divitias quas devoravit, evomet, et de ventre illius extrabet eas Deus. Caput a/pidume furget, ${ }^{\circ}$ occidet cum lingua vipr.e. Luet que fecit omnia,nec tamen confumeiur. Iuxta multitudipcm adinventionums /uarum, fic et fuftincbit. Quonià cöfringens nudakit pauperes : domum rapuit, ${ }_{2}$, nec eft fatiatas venter cius, *r cum habuevit que concupierit pofsidere nox poteitr. Non reman fit de cibo eius, \&r propterea zon permanebit de bovis eius.C 话 Jatiatus fuerit, arClaburur, aftuabit, $\mathcal{O}^{\circ}$ omnis dotor irruet /uper eum. Vtinam impleatur venter eius, uf immiltat in ( $\bar{u}(\mathcal{D} c u s)$ is â furoris fui, *o pluat fuper iDum bellung /uwm. Fugiet arma ferrea, *r irruet in arcum areum. Gladius eductus ev egrediens de vagina (ua, ov fulgurans in avaritudine fus: Omnes tenebre abfcondite funt in occultis eius. Devorabit eum ignis qui non fuccerditur, affligetarreliffus in to'bernaculo fuo. spertume crit gei men domus illius, detraherur in de fururis dei Heceft pars bominis ins-


## 

## A Godly and profitable Meditation,

 taken out of the 20. Chapter of the Boone of Job.The wisked mans pomp.

His joy.
His pride. His fall.

THis I know from the firft, that man wis pleaed upon earth, that the prate ( ot applait) given to wicked men, endureth but a hale, and the joy of an hypocite is bat font a moment Though his pride were fo great as torment $t$, heaven, and his head thould touch the skyon yet in the end foal thee come on perdition as a dung hill, and they who beheld him ( glory before) Shall fay, where is he? he thrall be fund is allying dreams, and is a phatutatie by nigher hall fade away. The eve that bitheld lam before, thai nu more fee him, nor yet thill his place (of hemin)
His coilden. His old age ever more bi hold hini.H's childici. faa. I be porn out with beggenie, and his wane ha dos thill it turne upon him bis sorrow. His (vila) homes if ! be replenished with the vices of has youth, and His bread. they fall fleep with him in his grave. His bread in his belly foal be turned nw irdiy into the gale His refttuition.
-
Hispuni/b. mont. of Serpents. The riches which thee hath devoured he thall vomit forth againe, and Gond th. It pull them forth of his belly. He foal fuck the head of Cocatrices, and the (venemous):ongues of adders for all the wickednes that he hath commuted nor yet fall he have end or cotifummation thereof. Hee fall Suffer according to the multurude of all
His mic his wicked inventions. For that by violence le sedneffc. hath fooyled the poore, made havock of his house,

## $(183)$

and not builded the fame. His womb'is never fatisfied, \& yet when he hath that which he defired, he Chall not bee able to poffeffe the fame. There remaineth no part of his meat (for ihe poere:) and therefore there fhall remaine nothing of his goods. When his belly is fuil then fhall he begin Hi igriefe, to be fraitned, then fhall he fweat, and all sinde of forrow fhall rulh upon him. I would his belly His affiwere once full, that God might fend out upon aiom him the rage of his fury, and raine upon him his war. He fhall dye away from Iron weapons, and run upon a bow of braffe. A drawne fword comming out of his skabard fhall flath as lightning in his bitterneffe. All darkneffe lye hidden for His dazhim in fecret : the fire that needech no kuadling nation. fh.ill devoure him, and hee fhall be tormented alone in his tabernacle. The off-ppring of his His poftehoufe fhall be made open, and pulled down, vity. in the day of Gods fury. This is the portion of a wicked man from
God, and this is she inheritance of his fubftance from the Lord.

## FINIS.


$\square$
(
(Pa

[^2]4

$+\frac{1}{2}+$

```
                                    -
```

                                    \(\square\)
    







$$
n_{2}
$$$\rightarrow$4$\rightarrow$(

$\qquad$


$$
A L \varepsilon 21+142302 \text { O3-26148 }
$$




[^0]:    W Marjhall foulpsit.

[^1]:    C 3
    0.4.

[^2]:    1
    4
    4
    1

